FLORUS ANGLICUS
OR AN EXACT
HISTORY
OF
England,
FROM THE
REIGN
OF
William the Conquerour
to the Death of
CHARLES the I.

By *Lambert Wood* Gent.

The Third Edition with Additions.

London, Printed for *Simon Miller* at the Starre in St *Pauls* Church-yard, 1658.

an edition of this book was printed in small 8vo, in this same year 1658, with heads of all the Kings & Queens. but tho' this small 12mo has only one head in the frontispiece, it contains above a hundred pages of addition to the reign of Charles 1st. which are not found in the edition which contains all the heads. . . . .

a second part of Flores Anglicus by J. D. Gent: was printed in 1660 with the title of "England's Confusions to suit this small 12mo. . . . . .

THE LIVELY POURTRAITURE of CHARLES THE I. KING OF GREAT BRITAIN FRANCE & IRELAND DEFENDER OF THE FAITH &

Tacit. Hist. Lib. I. *Alii diutius imperium tenuerunt; Nemo tam fortiter reliquit.*

FLORUS ANGLICUS
OR AN EXACT
HISTORY
OF
England,
FROM THE
REIGN
OF
William the Conquerour
to the Death of
CHARLES the I.

By *Lambert Wood* Gent.

The Third Edition with Additions.

London, Printed for *Simon Miller* at the Starre in St *Pauls* Church-yard, 1658.

B L

THere is now made publique Eighteen Books of the Secrets of Art and Nature, being the ſum and ſubſtance of Naturall Philoſophy. Firſt deſigned by *John Wecker*, and now much inlarged by Dr. *R. Read*; Sould at the Star in St. *Pauls* Churchyard.

TO THE READER.

FRIENDLY READER,

THou haſt here a ſhort Compendium of the Affairs of England, yet written with ſo much Care and Diligence, that there is nothing almoſt that is wanting in it,

but circumſtances, or things not uſefull. By this means, I ſuppoſe, I have ſpared the Reader both labour and time. For, what will it profit a man to ſpend his Age in ſearching out of that, which he may have repreſented to him at an inſtant? You may with one glance of your Eye runne over all the VVritings and Pains taken by many Authours. And that nothing might be wanting, I have drawn forth

the History *from the very* Infancy *of it, even unto the Death of* CHARLES *the First, not following my own Advice, but directed by the Testimony of them, who, setting aside all Envy, were Reall and Eye-witnesses of this Tragedy. I have offered no Violence to the* Truth, *by siding with any part. If I loved the one, I did not hate the other. And if perhaps any Man (which in Novel-*

ties is much desired) by his future Experience, shall bring forth the hidden Causes of things to the clearer Light, I will not refuse to give Credit to it, so farre is it from me from believing my own Report before the Relation of other Men. That which pleased me, I think shall not be distastefull unto thee. And I hope to reap the fruit of my Labours in it, your kinde Acceptance, which if I may obtain, I aim

at

at nothing elſe. Judge moderately of the Style, and cenſure it courteouſly. It will not cauſe your Admiration ſhining forth in a Scholaſtick Brightneſſe, it will not retard curious Eyes with the Elegancie of words, and glorying in the wittie choiſe of Sentences. What can I ſay more? It muſt be excuſed. The deſire of Praiſe could not carry me aloft, who want VVings for it. Moderate things pleaſe me, when

I can

To the Reader.

I *can reach no higher. Only* I *abhorre the envy of Detractors, and the quarrelling of carping* Momus. *Having premiſed thus much, I ſhall remain*

A true Friend to my Country,

Lambert Wood.

Courteous Reader, These Books following are printed for, or sold by Simon Miller *at the Star in St Pauls Church-yard.*

In Folio.

THe Civil Warres of *Spain*, in the Reign of *Charls* the 5th Emperor of *Germany*, and King of that Nation, wherein our late unhappy differences are paralleld in many particulars.

A general History of *Scotland*, from the year 767, to the death of King *James*.

The History of this Iron Age.

Dr. *Lightfoot* his Harmony of the N. Testam.

In large Quarto.

John Barckley his Argenis, Translated by his late Majesties special command. The Prose by Sir *Robert le Grise*, The Posie by *Tho. May*.

In Quarto.

The Harmonious consent and Confessions of Faith, of all the Protestant Reformed Churches, professed in all the Kingdoms, Nations and Provinces of *Europe*, published with Authority, to prevent the spreading of Errors and Heresies.

Camdens Remains concerning *Britain*, with many choice Additions, by *W.D.* Gent.

Christ tempted, the devil Conquered, being an Ex-

Expoſition on part of the fourth Chap. of St. *Mathews* Goſpel, by *John Gumbledon* Rector of *Coyly* in *Glamorgan*.

Abrahams faith, or the good old Religion, proving the Doctrine of the Church of *England*, to be the only true faith of Gods Elect: By *J. Nicholſon* Miniſter of the Goſp.

The Anatomy of Mortality: by *George Stroad*.

Aynſworth on the *Canticles*.

Paul Bayne, his *Dioceſans* Trial.

The Supream Power of Chriſtian States and Magiſtracy, vindicated from the inſolent pretences of *Gulielmus Apolonius*: By *E Gralle*.

A Treatiſe of Civil Pollicy; being a clear deciſion of 43 queries, concerning prerogative right and priviledge in reference to the ſupreme Prince and the people: By *Samuel Rutherford* Profeſſor of Divinity of St. *Andrews* in *Scotland*.

Politick and Military obſervations of Civil and Military Government, containing the birth, increaſe, decay of Monarchies, the carriage of Princes and Magiſtrates.

Mr. *Pinchin* his meritorious price of mans Redemption cleared

Aſtrology Theologized, ſhewing what nature and influence the Stars and Planets have over men, and how the ſame may be diverted and avoided.

Large Octavo.

The Reconciler of the Bible, wherein above 2000 ſeeming contradictions are fully & plainly reconciled.

A

A view of the Jewish Religion, with their Rites, Customes, and Ceremonies.

The History of *England*, Illustrated with the Lively Effigies of all the Kings and Queens since the Conquest.

Small Octavo.

Ed. Waterhouse Esq; his Discourse of piety and charity.

A view and defence of the Reformation of the Church of *England*, very usefull in these times.

Mr. *Peter du Moulin*, his Antidote against Popery; published on purpose to prevent the delusions of the Priests and Jesuits, who are now very busie amongst us.

Herberts Devotions, or a Companion for a Christian, containing Meditations and prayers, useful upon all occasions.

Mr. *Knowles* his Rudiment of the Hebrew Tongue.

A Book of scheams or figures of heaven, ready set for every four minuits of times, and very usefull for all Astrologers.

Florus Anglicus, or an exact History of *England* from the reign of *William* the Conqueror, to the death of the late King.

The King of *Spains* Cabinet Counsel divulged, or a Discovery of the Prevarications of the *Spaniards*, with all the Princes and States of *Europe*, for obtaining the *Universall Monarchy*.

Lingua, or the Combat of the Tongue and the five Senses for Superiority: a serious Comedy.

The Spirits Touchstone; being a clear discovery

covery how a man may certainly know whether he be truly taught by the Spirit of God or not.

The Poor mans Phyſician and Chirurgeon.

Duodecim.

Doctor *Smiths* Practice of Phyſick.

The Grammer War.

Poſelius Apothegms.

Faciculus Florum.

Craſhaws Viſions.

Drexelius School of Patience.

Helvicus Colloquies.

The Chriſtian Souldier his combat with the three arch enemies of mankinde, the world, the fleſh, and the devil.

In 24.

The New Teſtament.

The third part of the Bible.

THE

THE CONTENTS.

Concerning the first Kings of the Britans.	1
Of the first Norman *King.*	9
William the Second.	16
Henry the First.	20
Stephen King of *England.*	25
Henry the Second.	33
Richard the First.	38
John the First.	45
Henry the Third.	53
Edward the First.	64
Edward the Second.	71
Edward the Third.	85
Richard the Second.	100
Henry the Fourth.	115
Henry the Fifth.	122
Henry the Sixth.	131
Edward the Fourth.	149
Edward the Fifth, and *Richard* the Third.	161
Henry the Seventh.	172
Henry the Eighth.	182
Edward the Sixth.	200
Queen *Mary.*	206
Queen *Elizabeth.*	214
King *James.*	223
King CHARLES the First.	230

AN EXACT HISTORY OF England.

Concerning the first Kings of the Britans.

BRitany of old, was subject, not to one, but to divers Kings. The Names of four of them are called by *Cæsar*, *Cingetorix*, *Carvilius*, *Taximagulus*, and *Segonax*; whereupon the Conquest of the *Romans* over them was more sure, though it were longer in doing; for whilst they fought all severally, they are generally overcome: Yet the

Britans did ever now and then make some resistance, hardly submitting their necks to anothers Government: Amongst whom, for her Noble enterprize, *Vaodicia* the Queen was most remarkable; who with her two Daughters, Virgins, having formerly been forced by the *Roman* Souldiery, in revenge for her Chastity abused, raised a mighty Army, and overthrew the Enemy with a great slaughter; yet the fortune of the Warre changing afterwards, she escaped bondage provided for her, by drinking poison. This *Island* was subject to the *Roman* Government five hundred years: but discord creeping in at home, they left this place of their own accord, which they had won with so much labour; yet they took such *Britans* along with them, which they thought most fit for Warre, part whereof were slain in the Warre, part were consumed with hunger and want, and part of them transported themselves into that place in *France* for their safety, which from them is called *Britany*.

The *Picts* and *Scots*, they strive to enter upon the Countrey thus forsaken; whom to resist, they chose *Vortigernus* Earl of *Cornwall* for their King, and implored the help of the *Saxons* or *Angle-Saxons*, a Warlike Nation in *Germany*, who were promiscuously called by that Name: These with *Hengist* and *Horsus* their Leaders,

Leaders, made haſte into *England* with an Army of nine thouſand men; by whoſe valor, the *Scotch* and *Picts* were overcome in a pitched Battel. From hence aroſe ſo great an opinion of the *Saxons*, that they were held for Angels, as it were, ſent from heaven; and they were received into ſociety, by granting part of this Iſland unto them.

Alſo *Vortigernus* being taken with the beauty of *Rovena*, the Daughter of *Hengiſt*, eaſily obtained her for his Wife. *Hengiſt*, not a little elevated by this Succeſs, forgetting his own Countrey, ſuppoſed himſelf to be King of *Britany*; calling therefore not a few of his Countreymen out of *Saxony*, he attempted to gain the Land by force. But the Nobility of the Land foreſeeing theſe undertakings, they thruſt *Vortigernus*, an Uxorious King, from his Throne, and they create his Son *Vortimer* King. He ſuddenly picking up vvhat Souldiers he could, went againſt the Enemy, near *Alesfort*, vvhere in a ſingle fight, on one ſide *Caligarnus* Brother of *Vortimer*, on the other ſide *Herſus* Brother to *Hengiſt* vvere ſlain. The *Saxons* were compelled to forſake all *Britany*, or elſe a Territory vvas granted to them in *Tennet*, where they found no quiet. *Vortimer*, to whom *Britany* now vvas indebted for her liberty, having reigned four years, vvas poyſoned by *Roven*

the Wife of *Vortigernus*; and the Nobility are perſwaded by a crafty woman, to recal their former King *Vortigernus*. This being done, *Hengiſt* growing more bold by the favour of his Son in Law, levies a new Army, and again attempts to invade *Britany*, cunningly pretending that he came not to wage Warre with the *Britans*, but to fetch *Rovena*, and to make a continual League with them. The falſe Name of League diſpleaſed not, the *Britans* came unarmed to the place appointed, but the *Saxons* came armed with ſhort skeens under their garments; by this fraud theſe unprepared people were overcome without great conteſt, three hundred of the Nobility were ſlain, the King himſelf was taken, and obtained his liberty by the Provinces of *Kent*, *Suffolk*, *Suſſex*, and *Norfolk*, but he himſelf fled into *Wales*. In the mean while an infinite number of *Saxons* arrived in *Britany*, and they overflow the whole Iſland like a ſudden Deluge: untill ſuch time as *Aurelius Ambroſius*, a *Roman* born, yet very affectionate to the *Britans*, landed in *Britany* with a great multitude of people; and at firſt, he ſets upon King *Vortigernus* ſuddenly, who was doubtleſs the cauſe of all theſe troubles; and beſieging him in a certain Caſtle, he put fire to it, and conſumed him with the Fort. After this he holds the *Saxons* play enough, not in one Bat-

tel

tel alone; but at length he is miſerably deſtroyed by a *Saxon*, that was ſuborned to give him poiſon to drink, when he had been Ruler over the affairs of *Britany* thirty two years.

Uter ſucceeded him in the Kingdom, or as ſome will have it, *Pendragon* the *Britan*, ſo called, becauſe he was wont to wear the Dragons Head of Gold in his Banner, which is at this day an Enſign of Honour to the *Engliſh*. He alſo overthrew the pride of the *Saxons* in divers Battels, untill the eighteenth year of his Reign, poyſon being caſt into a Well (the water whereof he daily drank of) he was killed alſo.

Arthur ſucceeded him, who was born of a fair and Noble Woman, which was Wife to the Duke of *Cornwall*. This *Arthur* being of wonderfull force, killed eight hundred *Saxons* with his own hand, and did many other admirable things; he alſo ſet up the Order of the Round Table, but afterwards being wounded in Battell, he died in the twenty ſixth year of his Reign.

Conſtantinus ſucceeded him, and *Aurelius Conanus* Nephew to *Arthur* followed him, *Vortiporus* followed *Conanus*, then *Malgo Conanus*, afterward *Carelicus*, *Cadvanus* ſucceeded *Carelicus*, and after him *Cadwallus*, and *Cadwalladar*, who was the laſt of the *Britiſh* Kings;

for leaving his Grand-fathers Kingdom of his own accord, he sailed into *Britany* in *France*, by whose absence the courage of the *Saxons* grew so great, that coming in with great multitudes, they vanquished the *Britans*, that were now without a King, and they easily brought the whole Island under their Jurisdiction. *Cadwallader* striving to stand against their violence, was admonished (as it is supposed) from Heaven, to go to *Rome*, and to betake himself to a spiritual life, where he died a Monk. The *Saxons* being now Masters of all, divide this vast Island into seven Kingdoms, and as many Kings; yet he that was most powerfull was called King of *England*, so that it is apparent enough, that in this Heptarchy there was a Monarchy. And now the Christian Religion had taken no small root, (the clouds of Heathenish Errours being dispersed) by Dr *Austin*, the *English* Apostle, as they called him: And this light was received by the *English* men with so great Zeal, that they strove to enter their Names, built Churches, and performed Divine duties.

The *Saxon* Government flourished exceedingly under this Heptarchy for a long time; untill that intestine Warre rose amongst them, and brought all things under the power of the *West-Saxons*. For *Egbert*, King of the *West-Saxons*,

Saxons, vvhen he had by Arms ſubdued four Kingdoms, and was in hope to overcome the other two; in memory of his Countrey, after the name of *Britans* and *Saxons*, he commanded that all the Inhabitants ſhould be called *Engliſh men*, and the Countrey *England*.

Now the affairs of the *Engliſh* ſeemed to be at the height, when they were next to their ruine; ſo falſe is the appearance of all humane things, that when they glitter moſt, they may be ſuppoſed to be in the declining. For the *Danes* playing the Pirats about the *Engliſh* Coaſts for a long time, at laſt by force they enter the Land. *Angarus* and *Hubo* being their Captains, and they waſted the Countrey miſerably, ſparing neither ſacred nor common, which is apparent by a moſt famous example of the holy Virgins of *Coldingham*, vvho to preſerve their purity, diſmembred their bodies. For foreſeeing the violence of the mad Souldiers every where, they cut off their own noſtrils and their upper lips, that being like to Monſters, they might mitigate the diſhoneſt laſciviouſneſs of an unbelieving Nation. The Kings of the *Mercians* and *Eaſtern Engliſh* were killed by them; and their Kingdoms were poſſeſſed with no ſmall part of *Northumberland*: at laſt to repreſs the Inſolency of theſe *Danes*, a great Tribute was laid upon the people, which

was commonly called *Dan* or *Dans-gelt*. At length they were valiantly repulsed by *Alfred* King of the *West-Saxons*, and are driven out of all *Mercia*. Upon his Victories *Edward* his Sonne succeeding, subdued the East part of *England*, driving out the *Danes*. But *Adelstan* this Kings Bastard Sonne, cast such a fear upon them, that they yeelded not only *Northumberland*, but also all *England* unto him; and some of them became his Subjects willingly. But *Ethelrede* a weak and sluggish King reigning, taking heart again, they once more invade the Land, spoil and waste it miserably, whereby the *English* were provoked to conspire together, and so in one night they killed all the *Danes*, through the whole Island, and quencht so great a fire with the bloud of the Authors of it. *Swain* King of *Denmark*, being urged with this great slaughter of his Subjects, invades *England* with a mighty Army. He puts *Ethelrede* to flight, and brought the whole Land under his Obedience, and by his death he passed it over to his Sonne *Canutus*, who fought with *Ethelrede* (who came back again with his Son *Edmundus*) upon a changeable fortune, and left his two Sons to succeed him. *Harold* his Bastard, and *Canutus* the Bold; But when they were dead, the Kingdom returned again unto the *English*, who shook off the *Danish*-Yoke: and *Edward*

Son

Son to *Ethelred* was made King. Now it was that *England* began to take breath; but as it commonly fals out, idleneſs became the ruine of many: The lazy Prieſts, for the moſt part, being at eaſe, took care of all things but their Office. The people being more diſſolute with Luxury, grew contemptible by ſluggiſh dulneſs; Learning decayed, the Common-wealth waſted with divers Vices, Pride and Negligence had made a ready path for their Ruine.

Of the firſt Norman *King* WILLIAM *the Conquerour.*

Anno 1067.

EDward the *Confeſſour* laſt dead, whilſt he lived in *Normandy*, had promiſed after his Deceaſe, the Kingdom of *England* to *William* Duke of *Normandy*, as he was his Kinſman and near of Blood, yet that *William* was a Baſtard, Sonne of *Robert* King of *Normandy*, begot on a Countrey Maid. But *Harold* the Sonne of *Godwin* Earl of *Kent*, a bold man, and a good Souldier, poſſeſſed himſelf, by force, of the Kingdom, during the *Inter-regnum*, not waiting for the conſent of the Nobility, though his Brother

ther *Tosto* strove against him all he could, and made Warre with him; but at *York* he lost his life in a pitched Battel. In the mean while, *William* Duke of *Normandy*, depending on his right, raising an Army, came for *England* to the *South-Saxons*: *Harold* hearing of his arrivall, though his Souldiers were tired with a late fight, sets up his Standard against his new guest *William*. Not farre from *Hastings* they fought a sore Battel; but fortune turning against the *English*, *Harold* driven forward with a Warlike fury, riding into the midst of the Enemies, and fighting valiantly, vvas slain, and a great number of his men were slain vvith him. *William* the Conquerour presently brings his Conquering Banners to *London*, and is proclaimed King by the people that remained, having got a Kingdom by a lawfull Victory, which (as he said) was given him by God. This King (which is the use for Conquerours to do) abolishing forthwith all the Customs of the *English* Nation, and the greatest part of their Laws, brought in immediately his own Countrey fashions, and commanded that all Causes whatsoever should be pleaded in *French*: And excluding all the English that had born Arms against him out of their Patrimonies, he disposed of all their Demeans, Lands, Fields, and the rest of their Goods amongst his Souldiers for

for a reward of their Victory; but reſerving to himſelf the direct Principality and Homage, held to Himſelf and his Heirs, as a tenure from the Crown; ſo that none but the King ſhould be the right and true Lord of any thing. Alſo he cauſed a Seal to be made for himſelf, wherein was engraved, *By this acknowledg* William *of* Normandy *to be your Patron* : but on the other ſide vvas engraven, *By this Seal you muſt know that the ſame is King of* England. Having thus ſubdued the power of the Laity, he turns himſelf to the Clergy, and made an Edict, That no *Engliſh* Monk ſhould be capable of any ſecular Dignity, diſdaining the facilneſs of *Canutus*, who was formerly King, who had continued the honours entire to the people vvhom he had ſubdued; by which lenity the Inhabitants growing bold, after his death eaſily expelled forreigners, and recovered their former Liberty.

Then he appeaſed the approaching Warre of the *Danes*, by giving them money, that he might enjoy it peaceably upon any rate. And hence it was that the *Engliſh* vvere in no fear at all of the *Danes* that formerly ſo much infeſted them: yet they were not ſo free from troubles, but that here or there, there were ſome tumults amongſt the people, that were hardly ſuppreſſed and overcome, but the windy faction was ſoon diſperſed.

The

The greatest matter was the Rebellion of his Sonne *Robert* in *Normandy*, becauſe it was moſt againſt Nature. This Sonne at the Inſtigation of *Philip* King of *France*, demanded this Dukedom of his Father, as his proper Right; and without more words enters upon *Normandy* by force of Arms. It is true, his Father had promiſed him this Territory, but the Son was weary of delay, nor would he longer forbear from the Government he hoped for. The King hearing of his Sons Enterprize, ſuddenly goes againſt him with a gallant Army; They meet in Battel, the Son unhorſes his Father, and wounds him in the Arm. But when he knew his Fathers voice, alighting from his own horſe, he raiſed his Father from the ground, and kneeling down before him, craved pardon for his boldneſs, which he obtained preſently, his Father embracing him in his Arms. However he ſeemed thus to have appeaſed his Fathers wrath, yet God never ſuffering ſuch faults to go unpuniſhed, he had no good luck ever after. *William*, by ſuch clemency, was miraculouſly eminent, in other caſes, raiſing not a few of his adverſaries, (a rare example) to the greateſt Dignities, as if he endeavoured by his gentleneſs to mitigate their fierce ſpirits, and to calm their rebellious mindes, that they might be eminent in their duty to their Benefactor, as he was in beſtowing benefits

benefits on his enemies, and ſhould bluſh to deny Obedience unto him, whom they had offended, without danger. Having conquered therefore the Rebels, partly by good turns, partly by the Sword, he at length endeavours to enlarge his Kingdom, bringing *Wales* under his Command, and cauſing *Malcom* King of *Scots* to do him Homage, and ſo adding new Countries, he rewarded *England* for the Crown they granted to him. Yet leaſt the frowardneſs of his newly conquered Subjects ſhould grow inſolent, he laid upon them Taxes and Tributes that were not very light, and for the honour of his own Country, he made the Laws to be debated in the *French* Tongue, and he bridled the haughtineſs of the Monks. Only the men of *Kent* held their old Cuſtoms: For the King upon a certain time journeying toward *Dover*, was handſomly circumvented by the Inhabitants of *Kent*, carrying boughs cut down from the Trees, and they would not let him depart untill he had granted them the enjoyment of their Ancient Cuſtoms. Alſo he was indulgent to the *Londoners*, to let them enjoy the priviledges they had in the time of *Edward* the Confeſſor; but he forbad the Nobility from hunting of Deer, reſerving thoſe ſports for himſelf only.

He diſpoſed no leſs of Church Affairs, compoſing a difference between the Archbiſhops of *Canterbury*

Canterbury and *York*, for that this was subject to that; and ever after the Archbishop of *York* was called Primate of *England*, and the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, Primate of all *England*. Also he made the Churches of *Scotland* to be under the Primate of *York*, as the Churches of *England* were under *Canterbury*.

Though he seemed to curb the insolency of the Clergy, he had them yet in great esteem: For *Aldred* Archbishop of *York* being angry, because he could not obtain what he asked, and offering to go away in a fury, the King not enduring the hatred of that Prelate, fell down at his knees, and humbly asked forgiveness of him. The Bishop being admonished to raise up the King, answered, *No*, but said, *He shall feel what it is to offend S^t. Peter*. By the largeness of his Benefits he shewed forth the love he bare unto Churchmen, building innumerable Churches for the service of God, with Monasteries and other sacred Houses.

About the end of his Life and Kingdom he placed his two Sons *Robert* and *Henry*, almost in equal power over *Normandy*. There arose on a day a quarrel between *Henry*, and *Lewis* the *Dolphin* of *France*, playing at Tables, which was the cause of a great contention between the *French* and the *Normans*: The *Dolphin* drawing *Robert* on his side, enters *Normandy*

mandy with an Army. *William* forthwith having his Navy ready, ſails into *Normandy*, and with no difficulty, reducing his Son *Robert* to his former obedience, he marched to *Roan*, that he might finde the *French*-men work; when he was weary with toyling, being very fat, he made an halt a while: The *French* derided *William* becauſe he was ſick, and by reaſon of his fat belly, ſpeaking ſcoffingly, *That he was with childe and ready to be delivered.* When this jeer was told to *William*, he anſwered, *If pleaſe God that I ever recover of this child-birth, I will burn a thouſand lights to God in token of my thankfulneſs.* Nor was it long before he entred the Territories of *France*, and waſted all vvith fire and ſvvord. Yet ſhortly after, falling into a relapſe of the ſame weakneſs, he died at *Roan*: His followers not only forſook him being dead, but ſpoiled him of vvhat he had. And his Body unfortunately, being thrice forſaken, at laſt, vvas let dovvn into his ovvn Monument at *Cane* in *Normandy*, but not entire.

William *the ſecond King of* England.

Anno 1087.

William whoſe ſirname was *Rufus*, the third Son, ſucceeded the Conquerour. The beginning of his Reign was unquiet and troubleſom, his Brother *Robert* being offended with him, for taking the ſucceſſion from him; the Nobility being divided, and conſpiring his deſtruction. But he freed himſelf of all this danger, partly by force, partly by rewards, and partly by Arms, ſo that he pacified them all.

But the greater Tempeſt was threatned from *Scotland*, now ready to ariſe, for *Malcom* King of the *Scots*, though he ought Homage to the *Engliſh*, conjecturing, amongſt ſo many troubles, that he had now a fit opportunity to be proſperous in his buſineſs, with great force entred *Northumberland*, and with fire and ſword he conſumed all he met with; and loaded with ſpoils, he returned into his Countrey. But *William* having provided an Army, invaded *Scotland*, and ſubduing *Malcom*, brought him at laſt to his obedience, and made him give Hoſtages for ſecurity.

Robert

Robert the Kings Brother once more proclaims Warre against him, because he paid him not the money they were agreed upon; and the King of *France* taking his part, he took some Towns by Force from his Brother, which of Right belonged to him. But *William* bribed the *French* King, and so depriving his Brother of all help, he easily compelled him to crave pardon for his Retraynes.

But that all things might take their turns, *Malcom*, taking occasion of raising Arms from the contempt of the *English*, provoked *William* by a new injury, spoyling his Countrey: But when, being loaden with the spoil, he thought to return home, by chance being intercepted by Ambush, he lost his Life, and the Prize he had got. But yet this put not an end to the Troubles, for the *Welsh* setting upon the King already incumbred, depopulated his Territories in the vvay, vvhom at last *William* overcame in a successfull Battel.

In the mean while *Robert Mowbray*, by whose valour *Malcom* was subdued, supposing himself to be despised, or not so much honoured as he deserved, procuring some other Noblemen to joyn with him, riseth up against his Soveraign; but the King suddenly falling upon the small number of the Conspirators, easily put an end to this tumultuous Warre, taking *Mowbray*

priſoner. Yet leaſt the *Welſh* ſhould riſe again afreſh, however their ſtubbornneſs was beaten down, and ſhould occaſion greater danger; *William* now endeavours wholly to Conquer them, invading their Kingdom, and building of Bulwarks; But when this Warre proved to be tedious, the buſineſs being recommended to *Hugh* Earl of *Shropſhire*, and to the Earl of *Cheſter*, the King left them: They cruelly handled the *Welſh*, cutting off their Noſtrils and their Ears, untill ſuch time as the Earl of *Shropſhire* being ſlain, *Hugh* Count of *Cheſter*, killing the King of *Wales*, obtain'd a full Victory over them.

Whilſt *Lanfranc* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* lived, he was ruled as with a Bridle, but after he vvas dead, being as it were, freed from all bands, the State of the Church being oppreſſed, he began to rage with immoderate Tributes, and hard Laws: Now was the firſt time that all Eccleſiaſtical Preferments vvere ſet to ſale, and any thing was lawfull for Money. Yet the Tyranny of this King was not wholly voyd of doing good, for he gave freely to a poor Monk a Benefice, for which two others contended violently, beating the Bargain vvith great ſummes of Money.

However all theſe vices were made good by his great Magnanimity, for hearing of the ſiege of

of the Town of *Mantium*, breaking through a Wall, that he might the ſooner enter, none following him, but ſuch as were couragious like himſelf, and deſpiſing the danger of the turbulent Sea, he came unexpected, and freed the place, putting the Enemy to flight, and taking their Captain priſoner, who was *Helias* Earl of *Fleſcia*. That Earl when he ſaw himſelf captivated, imputed this his misfortune to the unlooked for arrival of the King, threatning great matters againſt the King, if he were once at Liberty, whereupon he was ſet free to do what he could.

Alſo he ſhewed a wonderful example of notable courage at a Fort call'd St *Michael's* Mount, for he was ſuddenly ſet upon by three Cavaliers, and although he was already unhorſed, he defended himſelf valiantly vvith his Saddle for a Target, and his drawn Sword, untill ſuch time as he was reſcued by his followers. When as thoſe that accompanied him, found fault with his too great care for his Saddle, *Yes*, ſaith he, *I would rather have loſt my life, then have left that to the ſcorn of the Enemy.*

He was faithfull in his promiſe, betwixt both in continence, he neither deſpiſed, nor yet adored Religion, but he was extream covetous. This was the firſt King of *England* that would look into the faults of the Clergy, and reſerved

to himſelf the puniſhing of them, neglecting the Biſhop of *Rome*.

Laſt of all, being much given to hunting, he was unhappily ſlain by an Arrow that rebounded from the Back of a Stag, and buried at *Winchester*. (The foreſhewing ſigns of his unhappy end being foreſeen, but not regarded.)

Henry *the First*, *King of* England.

Anno 1101.

Henry the Firſt ſucceeded his Brother, born of *William* in *England*, not a Duke but a King. Who in the abſence of his elder Brother *Robert*, either invaded the Kingdom, or procured it with money, or obtained it by the favour of the people; for he was more Learned than all his Brothers, and was ſo much the more dear to the people. He made good the Kingdom he had got with fraud, by good Deeds, Gentleneſs, and juſt Puniſhments: He every where preferred Learned men for places in the Church; He removed ſuch as were unlearned and unworthy from their places: He mitigated the more ſevere Laws, and aboliſhed hard Cuſtoms. He granted the Nobility free leave to hunt;

hunt; and with his bounty he ſo won the hearts of all. And becauſe he knew that the *Scotch* were his ill-willers, he made Peace with them, and to bind the League the faſter, he took *Maud* the ſiſter of King *Edgar* to be his Wife. That which hapned to his Father and to his Brothers, hapned to him, to have the firſt ſucceſs of Warre from his own kindred. Namely, the Biſhop of *Durrham* being the firſt mover of it (whom he had caſt into priſon for exacting too great Tributes) who had eſcaped his Keepers by reaſon of their neglect, his Brother *Robert* Duke of *Normandy* is ſtirred up to wage Warre with *Henry*, and to recover his right. *Robert* was now ready in *England* with an Army, and the day for the Battel was appointed, when as the Heralds were ſent up and down, at laſt Peace is agreed upon, twenty thouſand Franks being granted yearly to *Robert*, and hopes of ſucceſſion, ſhould he out-live his Brother *Henry*.

This danger ſcarce diſpelled, another fals upon the neck of it: For *Robert Bellamy* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, for no other cauſe but envy, inviting the *Welſh* to his aid, makes War againſt the King: But this ſtopped him not, for raiſing an Army ſuddenly, he put the *Welſh* to flight, he intercepted *Robert*, and confiſcating all his Goods, ſent him into Baniſhment: For to puniſh Traitors with death was not yet the faſhion.

The third tempeſt aroſe from *William* Earl of *Mortane* and of *Cornwall* the Kings Uncle, he being angry with his Couſin for denying him the County of *Kent*, endeavours by treachery to draw the Shire unto himſelf; but his Treaſon being diſcovered, for one County that he thought to win he loſt two.

Henry that was hitherto on the defenſive part, now takes up Arms willingly againſt his Brother *Robert*, being offended at ſome ſcoff of his, and levying an Army, he entred *Normandy*, and became Maſter of it all, ſcarce leaving ſo much as *Roan* to his Brother, and ſo he retreated for *England*. *Robert* had made trial of his ſeverity, and was reſolved to make proof of his levity, whereupon he follows after his Brother into *England*, and very ſubmiſſive, deſires pardon for his ſawcineſs. But *Henry*, either offended with the now freſh injury of his Brother, or elſe affecting the Dukedom of *Normandy*, neglected the prayers of his Brother. *Robert* being impatient of this ſcorn, returns for *Normandy*, and once more raiſing an Army, attempts a Warre againſt his Brother; but he coming ſucceſsfully upon *Robert* with a ſufficient Force, providently ſuppreſſed the miſchief in the birth, but not without blood; and he carried his Brother Captive into *England*, and putting out his eyes, he held him priſoner to the day of his death.

By

By this ſucceſs he grew Magnificent, whence aroſe envy againſt him : For *Fulck* Duke of *Anion*, *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, and *Lewis* ſirnamed the *Groſs*, King of *France*, entring a League, with joynt Forces, they endeavour to reſtore to *William* the Sonne of *Robert* the Land of his Grandfather. *Henry* preſently tranſports his Forces into *Normandy*, and encountring the Battel, put the *French* to flight, and after that he had diverſly made trial of Fortune : In fine, Peace is confirmed between the Duke of *Anion* and *Henry*, vvhich is confirmed by Marriage between *William* the Kings Son, and the ſaid Dukes Daughter. After this Peace followed between both theſe Kings, the Dukedom of *Normandy* being granted to *William* the Son of *Henry*, doing Homage for it. And thus by continuance of time, all the firſt-born Sons of the Kings of *England* are ſtyled Dukes of *Normandy*. But *Charles* Earl of *Flanders*, being wickedly ſlain at *Bruſſels*, leaving no other Heir, *William* the Son of *Robert*, vvho was the next right Heir to it (for that he was from the blood of *Maud* Daughter to *Baldwin*, and Wife to *William* the Conquerour) was elevated to this Dignity, who growing inſolent with this proſperity, endeavours to recover *Normandy* his Patrimony by his Grandfather, which he brought to [illegible] with no great difficulty, by aſ-

fistance of the *French* King; but receiving a wound in one of his hands, which was very small, and afterwards rankling, he lost both his Life and Patrimony by it.

Peace being confirmed abroad, yet *Henry* was tossed at home with civil Commotions, *Wales* being entred into a Conspiracy, whereupon he pursuing the Rebels, erring in his passage, he fell into a straight place, and redeemed, yet not without danger, a thousand Sheep and Oxen from them. And these were the Wars he had both at home and abroad.

He seldom or never Taxed the Land: He made none but good Laws: He was the first that ordained the convening of the several Orders, which is now called a Parliament. He punished Theeves, and false Coyners with severe justice: He diminished the power of the Pope in his Dominions, and such Suits as were decided in *England*, he forbad to be called back to *Rome*, without his cognizance thereof, the Pope not speaking any thing against it. But a greater Controversie arose concerning Ecclesiastical Promotions, both of them standing stoutly for his own Interest: But the King not regarding the Pope, held in his own hands the power of disposing and confirming Offices.

If he were over-luxurious, yet he was noble in his choice, not loving every one in [illegible] arms.

He

He had no lawfully begotten Sons, but he had many Baſtards, whereupon he endeavoured by all means to eſtabliſh the Government in *Maud* and her Daughters, but all in vain; *Stephen* ſucceeding, who was born from *Adela*, Daughter to *William* the Conquerour, excluding *Maud* his Wife and Daughter, which firſt married *Henry* the fourth the *Roman* Emperour, and he being dead, ſhe was married to *Jeffrey Plantagenet*, the Sonne of *Fulc* the Duke of *Anion*.

At laſt, by reaſon of ſome quarrel with the Duke of *Anion*, he fell into grief of mind, whence followed a great weakneſs of his body, by over-eating of Eels, and thence he fell into a burning Feaver, and ſo died after he had reigned thirty five years, in the forreſt of *Lions*, and was buried in *Redding Abby*, being the laſt of the *Norman* Kings.

STEPHEN *King of* England.

Anno 1136.

HEnry being dead, *Stephen* upon a doubtfull Title, and his elder Brothers delaying, firſt poſſeſſing, ſucceeded. He won the *Engliſh*, partly by promiſes, partly by Benevolence, to which was added his Title of Inheritance. Having

ving laid hold on the Kingdom by promiſes, he endeavours to make it good by courteſie. He took off the heavieſt Taxes, and granted his own Right to the Clergy, which the former Kings kept to themſelves. Alſo he would that Churchmen ſhould be free from yeelding Obedience to the temporal Magiſtrate: Thus he won the people and the Church-men, and the Nobility, by granting them free leave to Hunt, and liberty to build Caſtles. His Brother *Theobald*, who by his Birthright was next to the Crown, he pacified by a yearly Penſion.

Moreover, to win the good will of ſtrangers, he obtained for his Sonne *Euſtachius*, *Conſtance* the Daughter of *Lewis* King of *France*: yet he did not more by that Marriage, than by Treaſures ſtrengthen himſelf in the Kingdom of King *Henry*, which he ſpent not luxuriouſly, but to levy Souldiers, and to wage Warre with.

He was ſcarce Crowned, before he was forced to fall to his Arms; for *David* King of *Scotland*, ſtriving to aſſert the Intereſt of *Maud* the Empreſs, proclaimed Warre againſt *Stephen*, and poſſeſſed himſelf of the Towns of *Carlile* and *New-caſtle*. *Stephen* marched againſt him with a great Army, and granting *Cumberland* to *David*, and the County of *Huntingdon* to his Sonne, he put by a Tempeſt that was coming

ing

ng on, without any blood-ſhed at all.

Not long after he was ſhaken with Civil Commotions, greater than before, for when he was ickly, he was reported by ſome to be dead; hereupon the Nobles, abuſing their Caſtles to he Kings ruine, conſpired together, and endeavour to get the Kingdom into their own power. *Stephen*, leaſt by delay the danger ſhould get trength, partly by his Captains, partly with is own hand, he ſubdued the boldneſs of the Rebels. He marched againſt *Baldwin* the Ringeader of the Conſpirators, and driving him out of *Oxford*, he purſues him as farre as the Iſle of *Wight*, and forcing him from thence, he enjoyned him perpetual baniſhment. He was ſcarce quiet at home, but a Warre from abroad puts him to further trouble. For *Jeffrey Plantagenet*, relying on the Title of *Maud* his Wife, invades *Normandy* with offenſive Arms, and ſtrives to poſſeſs himſelf of his Grandfathers Territories. *Stephen* quickly levying an Army, haſtens thither, they having fought in divers ſmall skirmiſhes, come to an agreement, namely, that *Jeffrey* ſhould abſtain from all Title and Right, *Stephen* paying to him an annuity of thirty five thouſand Franks: When he returned, he found the Kingdom full of Warre and Tumults; for the Nobility enter upon a Conſpiracy, becauſe the King kept not his promiſes, and every one

of

of them, makes War in his own Dominions. Alſo *David* King of *Scotland*, forgetfull of his Covenant, enters upon *Northumberland*, and miſerably made havock of all by fire and ſword, he neither ſpared women nor innocent children, he kils the Prieſts before the Altars, the ſacred Virgins are raviſhed in the Churches.

The King to oppoſe himſelf againſt the greateſt danger, firſt bends his Forces againſt the *Scots*. But the Warre during long, giving command to *Thurſtin* Archbiſhop of *York* to wage Warre with the *Scots*, he returned home that he might tame the reſt of the Rebels, which by force of Arms, by Promiſes, and by his Benevolence, he at laſt reclaimed. *Thurſtin* in the mean time, joyning Battel, ſubdued the *Scots*, and ſlew them with a great ſlaughter, for eleven thouſand *Scots* were ſlain in the fight, beſides thoſe that ran away, and were killed in the purſuit. The King being made more bold by this ſucceſs, enters now with Arms upon *Scotland*, and afflicted *David* with a ſore loſs, and compelled him to beg for Peace, which at laſt he yeelded to; *Stephen* taking *Henry* the Son to *David* for Hoſtage. *Stephen* returning laid ſiege to *Ludlow*, the Receptakle for the Conſpirators, and with his own hand he freed *Henry*, whom he had taken for a Pledge.

The moſt cruel Tempeſt followed this fortune,

ne, For *Maud* requiring her Right, arrived *England*: *Stephen* hearing this, layes ſiege to *rundel*-Caſtle, where by chance ſhe harbour- her ſelf; but in this deſperate ſiege, vvater ing all ſpent, *Maud* delivered up the Caſtle, ving leave given her to retire towards *Bri- ol.*

In the mean while he quickly removes to *incoln*, taken by *Randulph* Sonne to *Robert* rl of *Gloceſter*, and environs it with a ſiege: he Earls of *Cheſter* and *Gloceſter*, endeavour- g to free the City, fight with *Stephen* hand to nd; in which fight, *Stephen* is taken priſoner, ter that he had given wonderfull arguments his proweſs; and he is brought before *Maud*, who ſent him toward *Briſtol* to be im- priſoned, and ſhe in the mean while poſſeſſeth e Kingdom, entring *London* as Conquerour in riumph.

But *Maud* or *Mathilde*, the Wife of *Stephen*, earing of the Kings misfortune, humbly in- eated *Maud*, that ſhe being of a long time eary of the Government, might have liberty live with her Husband a private life. Alſo e *Londoners*, they require their ancient Laws hich they enjoyed under *Edward* the *Confeſ- r*; but *Maud* would grant neither. *Maud* not during the high ſtomack of *Mathilde*, and teſting ignoble ſervitude, cals for *Euſtachius* her

her Son, with a ſelect company of Souldier out of *Kent* to *London*, who joyning with th *Londoners*, that were wonderfully offended tha their ſuits were denied them, alſo fortifyin himſelf with the help of the Biſhop of *Winche ſter*, they fall upon the Army of *Mathilde* which fled privately to *Oxford*, and asked no help in vain of *David* King of *Scotland*, b whoſe aſſiſtance her Army being encreaſed, ſh beſieged *Wincheſter:* But the Queen with he Son *Euſtachius*, falling on her Fortreſs, o vercame *Mathilde* in a pitched Battel, an took *Robert* Son to *Mathilde*, but *Mathild* her ſelf eſcaped luckily. A Treaty for Peac followed this Fortune, whereby *Robert* on th one hand, *Stephen* on the other are ſet at liberty but there was no other Condition agreed upon wherefore the Trumpet ſounds again to Warre and *Stephen* being now free, beſieges *Mathild* at *Oxford*; But ſhe deſpiſing danger, paſſe through his Army in the night. Yet ſhe was ſo frighted with the preſent danger, that ſhe eve after forbare to make Warre with him, leavin the Charge of the whole Buſineſs to her Sonne *Henry*.

In the mean while the City of *Lincoln* wa valiantly defended againſt the King. But a laſt the Earl willingly yeelded to the King, deſi ring reconciliation; yet *Stephen* entertaine him

him not ſo courteouſly, but ſpoil'd the miſerable Earl of all his Eſtate; by which perjury he did not a little alienate the mindes of his Subjects.

Henry by the death of his Father *Jeffrey*, having got the Dukedom of *Anion* and of *Aquitan*, and with his Wife *Eleonar* the County of *Poictiers*, by a freſh attempt, but with a few Souldiers, ſails for *England*, hoping at laſt to regain his Grandfathers Kingdom. He was no ſooner landed, but his Friends came flocking to him every way, and being fortified with new helps, he layes ſiege to *Malmsbury*, but the King coming upon him with more Forces, overcame the fewer Forces of the Enemy.

Here is a thing to be rightly wonder'd at, amongſt drawn Swords Peace began to ſhew her ſelf, *Stephen* procured reſt by granting, which he could not obtain by Victories; and *Henry* obtained that Kingdom peaceably, which he ſought for by Warre: For whilſt here and there, with equal endeavours they wage Warre, *Euſtachius* ſuddenly died, and *Stephen* being deprived of an Heir to ſucceed him, being overcome with mourning, he willingly entred Conditions of Peace with *Henry* and *Mathilde*, whereby he aſſigned his Enemy to be his Succeſſour, and adopted him for his Son, being he had none nearer of blood unto him; ſo little

little Faith or Constancy is there in humane Affairs, they that but now fought with all their might, do now embrace one the other, and *Stephen* recovers his lost Son, by adopting his Enemy. So *Henry* seeking so great a Kingdom by Warre, found both the Kingdom and a Father in Peace.

The Affairs of *England* were too troublesom for *Stephen* to exact Tribute from his Subjects, yet he abundantly recompensed this loss, by storing the Exchequer with the goods of the Rebels. He made no Laws, when as by reason of a continual War, he seemed more ready to receive than to give: Yet he had no greater Victory than over the Clergy, whose obstinacy and pride he regulated, and made them good Subjects. He that had lived in War and Contention, ought not to dy without trouble and neglect; for he had scarce made Peace with *Henry*, but he was afresh seized on by his old disease of the Emrods and the Cholick, having not been free from Warre one Year, he died at *Dover*, at the age of 49 years, and lieth buried at *Feversham*.

HENRY *the Second*, *King of* England.

Anno 1155.

Stephen being now dead, *Henry* Duke of *Anjou* ſucceeded him in the Throne, as he and King *Stephen* had agreed. He behaved himſelf wiſely when he began to Reign, chooſing the wiſeſt men for his Counſellors, expelling ſtrangers that came in hopes of rapine, eſpecially thoſe of *Flanders*, demoliſhing the Caſtles that the Nobility had built, at the connivance of King *Stephen*, which they had often abuſed to Sedition. The Laws alſo that were faulty, during the time of War, he reduced to their former Integrity, and he baniſhed ſome of the Nobility for perjury. The Demeans which were beſtowed upon thoſe that were unworthy of them, by Licence from King *Stephen*, he took to himſelf, and ſo he ſpared his Subjects from Tributes, thinking it ſafer to offend a few than many. He had yet no Competitors, and ſo was ſafer from Incurſions and Rebellions. The *Welſh* made ſome rude Commotion, who were no ſooner up, but he ſubdued them. He made offenſive Warre againſt *Malcom* King of

Scots, and drove them out by force from *Northumberland*, the City of *Carlile* and *Newcaſtle*, which King *Stephen* had granted him.

He left him *Huntington* to do him Homage for it, for *David* King of *Scots* ſake, who was dead. He took by force from his Brother *Jeffrey*, after his Fathers Death, the Dukedom of *Anion* which his Father had granted him upon intreaty, having the Popes Indulgence to break his Oath.

Then he attempts to take to himſelf, from *Raymundus* Earl of a place conſecrated to Saint *Ægidius*, the Dukedom of *Tholouſe*, which of right belonged unto him, and when *Lewis* the King of *France* would help *Raymund*, he wages Warre with them both. Now the Armies were ready for Battel, but at the mediation of friends, Peace is at laſt concluded, and the County of *Tholouſe* is granted to *Raymund* for a time, a Marriage being made between *Henry* King of *Englands* Son, and *Margaret* Daughter to King *Lewis*.

If he managed all things wiſely hitherto, now he doth order his matters as fooliſhly, taking his Son *Henry* into the Government with him. For *Lewis* ſcorning the puſillanimity of his Son in Law, that he would permit his Father to be equal with him in the Kingdom, and would himſelf be a Titular King only, he eaſily inflamed

med his youthfull minde that was ready to take fire with unlawfull desires. This envy had now broke forth into open hate, and the Son began to cavil at all the Father either did or said. Nor was the Sons Ingratitude unknowne to the Father; wherefore Messengers being sent to *Lewis*, he endeavoured to oppress and extinguish those beginnings of Discord. But *Lewis* laught at the words of the Embassadours, asking scornfully, *Why they call'd him their Master, who had freely delivered up his Right to his Son*, and so dismissed them without any other Answer. To this there was joyned the malice of Queen *Eleonor* that she bare him, by reason that he loved Whores, whereby she instigated her other two Sons, *Richard* and *Jeffrey*, that they should assist the Son against the Father.

They fled to *Henry* into *Normandy*, and conspire joyntly against their Father. Also *William* King of *Scotland*, *Hugh* Earl of *Chester*, *Roger Mowbray*, *Hugh Bigot*, and others, fell from him. *Henry* with this Augmentation grew more bold, and now provides open Warre against his Father: Fortune was changeable in divers Battels, both courage and fraud being employed in the Warres. But *Richard* who had fallen off from his Father, repenting of his errour, came to him, and craved pardon, which he easily obtain'd; at last some of the Rebels being ta-

ken, and the *Scotch* vanquished, Peace is confirmed between the Father and the Sonne, at the Mediation of *Richard*, *Adela* the Daughter of *Lewis* being married to *Richard* And so *Henry* returned into *England* with his Sons, where *Henry* his eldest Sonne died, and his Relict is sent home again into *France* to her Father, and afterwards she was married to the King of *Hungary*.

But *Richard* taking it ill that his Marriage was so long deferred (for the Father by his unlawfull luft, was supposed to keep *Adela* for himself, continually putting off the Matrimony) fell again into the same Rebellion which he had renounced by Oath. And being confederate with his Brother *John*, and with *Philip* then King of *France*, he makes Warre with his Father, and at *Mens* he besieged the old King, who slipt away in the night, and thought, though in vain, to raise the siege, at last the Town is delivered into the enemies hands, to his greater loss, because King *Henry* was born in that Town: Wherefore, either by reason of his Power broken, or by the loss of his native City, his Majesty being eclipsed, he that had hitherto given Laws, was now forced to take Laws from the Enemy. And these are the Warres that he waged.

This King subdued *Ireland* without spilling blood,

blood, Pope *Hadrian* an *Engliſh* man commanding it, and he built a magnificent Palace at *Dublin* for the uſe of his Poſterity.

He augmented his Treaſure more by Confiſcations and Parſimony, than by Tributes and Impoſts. Becauſe he was too ſparing toward his children, it is ſuppoſed that gave them occaſion to revolt, but he left an infinite Treaſure when he died, and recompenſed abundantly the want they had ſuſtained.

In the beginning of his Reign, he cut off ſomething from the ſeverity of the Laws, and he erected new Tribunals for the uſe of his Subjects, and he firſt commanded the Lions to be kept alive in the Tower of *London*, which cuſtom is continued to this day.

He brought the Clergy under the Magiſtrate, though *Thomas Becket* ſtood ſtifly againſt it, who for that was baniſhed, and received into favour again by the Interceſſion of the Pope and the King of *France*, but when he would not yeeld to the Kings pleaſure, he was miſerably butcher'd by four Souldiers of Horſe, but after his death he was conſecrated for a Saint. *Henry* alſo being wrapt up with the love of luxury and of whores, had his Wife alwayes his enemy, which he at laſt impriſoned, becauſe ſhe had ſuborned her Sons to Rebel.

The *French* King ſent him a Catalogue of all

thoſe Rebels that conſpired his Death; and when firſt of all he ſaw the Name of his younger Son *John*, he ſunk down half-dead with grief, and the affliction increaſing, he died of it, being above threeſcore years old, and had ruled the Kingdom of *England* thirty five years, and was buried at *Fontenward* in *Normandy*.

Richard *the Firſt, King of* England.

Anno 1189.

This King was Crown'd at *Weſtminſter*, the 3d of *Septemb. Anno* 1189. namely on that Day which was notable for an accidental ſlaughter of the *Jews*, whoſe Inſolence he abundantly reſtrained, by giving Licence to weed out that odious kinde of men. He was famous for Benefits toward his Mother and Brother, receiving her, as it were, into Society of the Government with him, and augmenting the other with ſix Counties at once. He ſent *Adela* that was long before betrothed him, yet as his Fathers Concubine, back again into her Countrey, but not without a Reward of her Virginity, and in her place, that he might not with an inceſtuous Wedlock, defile his Fathers Bed, he took to

Wife

Wife *Berengaria* the Daughter of *Garſias* King of *Navar*.

Now at laſt he reſolved to perform his expedition, long intended for the holy Land: Collecting every way great Treaſures, and ſelling Priviledges, Demeans, Immunities, and Cities, *London* it ſelf being ſcarce left out of the ſale. For the time of his abſence, he truſted the Kingdom of *England* to *Hugh Baldulph* Biſhop of *Durrham*, and to *William Prunellus*, and *William Longo-Scampius* Chancellour of the Kingdom, dividing to each his part: He ſet *Robert* Earl of *Leiceſter*, a man of Integrity, over *Normandy* and *Aquitan*. Yet to prevent his Ambition of his Brother *John*, he was minded to ſend him away for *Normandy*, but the Mother interceding for him, and becoming Surety for his fidelity, he was left in *England*. Laſtly, appointing *Arthur* his Brother, *Jeffreys* Son to be his Succeſſour, in caſe he ſhould die in this Expedition, he entred upon his Voyage.

Richard thus armed with five thouſand Horſe, and thirty thouſand Foot, goes forward on his Journey. He went by Land through *France* to *Marſeilles*, with ſome choice Souldiers to wait in that City for his Fleet, and to Embarque himſelf there, but the winde being long troubleſom it came too late; wherefore being impatient of delayes, he hired Ships, and takes his

Paſſage for *Meſſana*, whither *Philip* King of *France* was gone with his Navy before. At laſt alſo arrived the *Engliſh* Fleet; They are received by *Tancred* King of *Sicily*, with a great ſhew of Courteſie, but he by reaſon of ſome old quarrel, was not Friends with *Richard*, and laid ſnares for *Richard*, and for all the *Engliſh*, and by a Confederacy of the Citizens, ſhut him and all the *Engliſh* Souldiers out of the Town: *Richard* offended with this affront, drew up his Souldiers againſt the City, and eaſily became Maſter of it, and had made a great ſlaughter on the King and the Citizens, had he not pacified *Richard* by paying the Dowry, which he had unjuſtly detained from *Joan*, *Richard* his Siſter, who was married to *William* King of *Sicily* deceaſed, and had alſo eſpouſed his Daughter to *Arthur*, Nephew to *Richard*. *Philip* King of *France* firſt ſet ſail, and came to *Ptolemais*, which City the Chriſtians had a long time beſieged, with thoſe he adjoyned himſelf and his Forces. *Richard* after that wayed Anchor with a hundred and ninety Ships, and fifty Gallies. But by a contrary winde he is driven into *Cyprus*, which Iſland, when he was kept from landing by the Inhabitants, he invading by force of Arms, and became Maſter of it, and leaving *Richard Canvil*, and *Robert Turnham* in it with a ſufficient Garriſon, he alſo ſailed toward *Ptolemais*; which

which City, after it had been beſieged two years, was delivered up to the Chriſtians by *Saladine*.

Other Cities alſo he became Maſter of, all which he neglected, onely *Joppa* he made a Garriſon of. In the mean while *Guido Luſinianus* invades *Tyre*, and with it he takes upon him the Title of King of *Jeruſalem*, which he afterwards changed for the Kingdom of *Cyprus*. And hence it was that the Kings of *England* for a long time, were called Kings of *Jeruſalem*. But *Philip* envying this Glory of *Richard*, and emulating him, becauſe he could not equal his vertue, forſaking the Warre, ſail'd back for *France*, leaving the buſineſs to *Odo* Duke of *Burgundy*, to wage Warre with *Saladine* in his abſence. Yet *Richard* would not let him depart, till he had taken his Oath, to attempt nothing againſt the Dominions of *Richard* in his abſence. But he was no ſooner got home, but againſt Right and Equity he invaded *Normandy*; with which injury *Richard* being offended, and much weakned by the departure of *Odo* with his Forces, *Richard* reſolves homewards, making Peace with *Saladine* upon unjuſt Tearms. His Navy ſailing homewards, he went by Land through *Dalmatia* and *Germany*, at laſt he came to *Vienna*, where being unknown, he deſired to be concealed; at laſt being diſcovered by *Leopoldus*

poldus Archduke of *Austria*, who was angry with the *English* for the injury was done him in the taking of *Ptolomais*, he vvas cast into Prison, and vvas sent to the Emperour, vvho demanded him, and after a hard Captivity, he was forced to Redeem his Liberty with a mighty Ransom, which injury afterwards cost the Emperour his Life, and *Leopoldus*, first the breaking, and lastly the losing his Leg. But he after four years returned to his Kingdom.

He found his Kingdom full of Troubles and Contentions, for *William Longo-Scampius* Bishop of *Ely*, vvho in the Kings absence managed, as it vvere, the vvhole Government, being unaccustomed with so great an Office, (though he had otherwise enough to do of his own business) grew insolent and over-proud. Hence arose a Controversie between him and Duke *John* the Kings Brother; the King took his Brothers part; vvhereupon he was put out of his Authority, the Archbishop of *Roan* being put in his place. When therefore he could no longer make Resistance in the Kingdom, he bethought himselfe to make an escape beyond Sea, disguised in Womans Apparel, but being discovered, the Women did punish him sufficiently by deriding him for counterfeiting his Sex, and so being much disgraced, he fled into *Normandy*, to complain to King *Richard*; and when he had com-

complained of the injury done him, he ſought in vain for his loſt dignity.

Alſo *Philip* King of *France* invaded *Normandy* with an Army, as he had promiſed. He ſought to draw *John* the Kings Brother to his ſide, but could not, his Mother *Eleoner* diſſwading him. But though he openly did nothing to his Brothers prejudice, yet privately, a falſe rumour being ſpread of the Kings Death through *England*, he endeavours to wreſt the Kingdom from him, whereby afterwards he loſt all the favour he had with his Brother, together with his Honour. The King after this goes againſt King *Philip* with a great Navy, and firſt he freed the City *Vernowle*, and afterwards *Vandoſme* from his Leaguer ſo haſtily, that the *French* man leaving for fear all his Baggage, ran away. At laſt a Peace being made between both, they are forced to abſtain from Warre, though againſt their wills.

In the mean while his Kingdom was toſſed with various commotions: Firſt, by Theeves, the chief whereof being killed, that faction was eaſily ſuppreſſed. Secondly, by a greater Commotion from the Jews, ariſing from one that had forſworn the Superſtition of his Anceſtors; for the reſt of the Jews being offended at it, vvho continued in their Errour, could hardly Tolerate their Converted Brother, they meet him in the high-

high-way, and fine him ſorely, whence firſt grew a Faction, then a Tumult, and ſlaughter of the Jews every where. Nor was this rage ſhut up in one Town, but paſſing the bounds, it went firſt to *Stamford*, then to *Lincoln*, then to *York*, where the Jews flying into a Caſtle, killing firſt their Wives and Children moſt barbarouſly, and caſting their dead bodies out of the windows on the Enemies heads, putting fire to Gun-powder, they wre almoſt all blown up, a cruel example of their ſtubbornneſs.

Laſtly, It is a Queſtion, Whether the King were more angry with the Commotion, or with the puniſhment of Covetouſneſs, vvhereby he found an end of all his troubles. A certain Souldier who *received wages* from King *Richard* had found a mighty Treaſure, and fearing leaſt the King ſhould demand it, he vvent to *Lemoſin*, and hid it in the Town of *Calacum*, when the Towns-men prolonged to let the King come in, he laid ſiege to it, vvhereby receiving a vvound in his Arm, he died ſhortly after of it, having won the Citie, but not found the Treaſure, and was buried at *Fontenward*.

He was of a reaſonable Stature, of a pleaſant and gracefull Countenance, he was commendable in Manners, famous more for his Vertues than Vices, ſparing of Tribute, but very cunning to raiſe Money. He vvas the firſt that

that ſubjected the City of *London* to *Aldermen* and *Sheriffs*, blotting out the Name of *Potent Earls*.

JOHN *the Firſt*, *King of* England.

Anno 1201.

RICHARD being dead, JOHN invades the Kingdom by Right of Anticipation, ſhutting out his Couſin *Arthur*, to whom the Succeſſion was due by Right of Inheritance, and alſo by the Prerogative of his Age, for *Arthur* was not yet over thirteen years old. Alſo truſting to his Bribes (for he had robbed thoſe Treaſures his Brother had compiled) he entred the Government of his own accord, (not caring any thing for the envy of his Subjects) his Friends in *England* not a little helping him.

The firſt Tempeſt was depending from his Couſin *Arthur*, whoſe Kingdom he had not only taken from him, but alſo had drawn the Dukedom of *Normandy* to himſelf, leaving only the Dukedom of *Anion* to the childe. Alſo his Mother *Conſtance* finding her ſelf too weak for the *Engliſh*, flies to the *French* King, and craves aid of him, who promiſed not only to reſtore

restore all *Normandy*, but all *England* also to *Arthur*, and received the young man into his protection: Wherefore *Philip* listing an Army, first made good the Duchy of *Anion* to *Arthur*, and then he invaded *Normandy*.

But *John* sailing into *Normandy*, upbraids *Philip* with his perfidiousness, because he had foully broken the Peace he had made with his Brother *Richard*: Yet they went not to Arms, for while they discourse, and each defends his Right, they agreed on fifty dayes Cessation of Arms, *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders* being against it, who therefore forsaking *Philip*, made his Peace with the *English*, and takes Counsel by what means, when the Truce was ended they should wage Warre with the *French*. But when *John* was free from the care of Warre, he strikes hand with *Philip* upon unjust terms, and *Baldwin* hating his sluggishness, joyned with the *French* once more, and restored the Warre of *Jerusalem*. The *English* man was glad, and returns for his Countrey, yet was very ill received by the Nobility, which hated those base Conditions. *John* now free from Warre, turns all his care to Pole his Subjects, and to follow his pleasures. Also he deprived his Brother *Jeffrey* Archbishop of *York* of all his Fortune, because he dehorted him from such Injury. Then going into *Normandy*, he Divorced his Wife

Avis,

Avis, and married *Isabel* Daughter and Heir to the Earl of *Engolesme*. She was Crown'd at *Canterbury*. But the oppression and violence of King *John* prevailed so far, also his base luxury, not without murder and man-slaughter (for he destroyed *Matilda*, a beautifull Maid) causing her to drink poyson, because she would not yeeld to his intreaty to be corrupted by him, and *William Brause* with his Wife for speaking something freely, he killed all with Famine, taking all their Estate from them. But when he asked Subsidy, all the Nobility, as one man, denied to follow him forth to Wars, unless he would remove the heavy Imposts, and free them from those cursed injuries. Yet he went afterwards into *Normandy*, and then to *Paris*, with his Wife, where they are to outward appearance friendly received by King *Pilip*.

But *Hugh* Earl of *Marsh*, to whom *Isabella* the Kings Wife was first betrothed, being angry with the King for taking his Wife from him, joyned with *Arthur*, and make a new War. *Philip* took their part, and so joyntly those of *Tours* first, then they of *Anion* invade, and they take the Town *Mirabellum*, with *Eleoner* the Grandmother to *Arthur*, who had fled thither for security, which was notwithstanding received by *Arthur* with great Piety and Obedience.

John reproves King *Philip* for his falſneſs, and began to think ſeriouſly of revenge, and coming ſuddenly and unlooked for upon the Forces of the Enemy, deſtroyed them with a great ſlaughter, taking thoſe Captive vvhich could not run away, amongſt vvhom was *Arthur*, vvho ſhortly after died in priſon of hunger, or going to make an eſcape, was drowned in the River, or as it is vulgarly thought, he died of grief and ſorrow. His Siſter *Eleoner* died the ſame way ſhortly after.

All Commotions are not extinguiſhed with *Arthur*, but Warre ſpringing out from Warre, now here, now there ariſe new cauſes of diſagreement: For *Conſtance* Mother to *Arthur*, complaining to *Philip* of her Sonne *Arthurs* death, ſhe eaſily inſtigated him to a juſt revenge, vvho vvas of his own accord the greateſt enemy to *John*. He preſently ſends his Heralds to *John*, and ſets him a day of hearing to appear before him, as one that ought him Homage: But *John* refuſing, he entred his Territories by Arms, and in ſhort time he ſubdued all *Normandy*, as it were in the face of *John*, who ſtayed ſluggiſhly at *Roan*, and afterwards doing nothing, he returned into *England*, the Nobility gnaſhing their teeth at it in vain. To this may be added the ſecond and third loſs, for *Eleoner*, the Kings Mother died, vvho did the Kingdom as much

good

good by her vertues, as the King did miſchief by his vices. *Hubert* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* followed her, vvho was another Ornament of the Kingdom.

And now *John* ſeemed to be in poſſibility to recover his loſs, ſo his ſubjects vvould bring Subſidies to help him to wage Warre, vvhich they ſtrove who ſhould do it moſt: So he marcheth towards *Portſmouth*, and ſuddenly ſet ſail, not waiting for the Noblemen that came after him; but he had no ſooner left the ſhore, but he preſently returned, and upbraiding the Nobility (becauſe they followed him not) with ſluggiſhneſs and diſobedience, he fined them with a vaſt ſumme of Money, and ſo being the richer by his double Uſury, neglecting the Warre, he returned home.

Philip in the mean while, that he might expell all the *Engliſh* out of his Kingdom, takes *Chinon* by force, and he had quickly put an end to the Warre, unleſs *Guido* the Husband of *Conſtance*, falling off from *Philip*, had joyned vvith *John*, by whoſe help he levied a new Army, whereby he took *Mountalbans*, a Town otherwiſe impregnable, with wonderfull Celerity, in fifteen dayes; and after that ſtorming *Anion*, he gave the Plunder to his Souldiers, raſing the Wals of the Town, but he repented it afterwards, and perchance becauſe he was born

in that City, he built it again more firm and beautifull than it was. And now *Philip* and *John* were in Arms, now on this side, now on that, the Army expected the word to fall on, and nothing but blood and slaughter was to be expected, but at the Intercession of Friends, a Cessation was granted for two years.

John therefore returns for *England*, but upon his return he enters the Borders of the *Scotch*, and kils multitudes of them, and brought King *Alexander* to his Obedience; and those *Irish* that he found to have revolted, he sailed with his Fleet thither, and easily brought them under; So he made the Rebel *Welsh* upon his return, become Subjects, taking eight and twenty Noble-mens Children for Pledges, which when the *Welsh* rose again, he commanded to kill them all. So much prevails unadvised desire of wrong, though sometimes it may oppose good examples to unsatisfied Cruelty, and so *John* was more cruel and valiant against none than toward his own Subjects. He returned afterward into *France*, that (as we said) he might repair the wals of *Anjou*, when those of *Poitou* revolted to him. But *Lewis* the Son of *Philip* mustering an Army presently, not only mastered and punished the Rebels, but also put all *Johns* Army to flight, and destroyed them, taking the chief Nobility, by which loss, he was

brought

brought to desperation, yet making Peace, he returned for *England* to vex his Subjects, and to pour forth all his malice on the Innocent.

In the mean time the Nobility of *England*, because they could obtain from the King no release of their Burdens, conspiring together, wage Warre against him. The King when he was too weak for them, attempted to proceed by Subtilty, and calling the Nobility together, granted them their Requests. But afterwards being discharged by the Pope from his Promises, he takes up Arms against them, and spoiling almost all *England*, he threw down the Castles and Forts of all the Conspirators every where. There was a Bull sent from the Pope against all the Nobility that disobeyed his Commands. The Nobility being too weak for the King in Arms, they commit an unjust and hainous wickedness, calling in the Son of the *French* King to their assistance, and promising Obedience to him, as to their King: He stayed not, but sailed for *England* with a Navy of six hundred Ships. The conspired Nobility joyn'd with him, and so joyning their Forces they came for *London*, where *Lewis* with a fair speech won the Citizens to his side. Also the *Scotch* entred *England* with a mighty Army, destroying all things in the way, whereby *Lewis*,

as also by the other Forces being strengthned, over-runs all *England* with ease. *John* in the mean time, lest he should seem to do nothing, gathering together a great many vagabonds, spoils miserably the Lands of his Subjects, at last in the passing of some Rivers, not a few of his followers being drown'd, and being overweakned for want of help, falling thereby into grief of minde, and so into a Feaver, he died within a few dayes, and was buried at *Worcester*.

Great Controversies arose between the King and the Pope during his Reign in Church-matters about the choice of some Bishops: The Pope got the upper hand, and made the King do him Homage, after that the business of the Church had stood still six years, and three moneths.

He was immoderate in blasphemies and execrations; Also he is thought to have sought aid from *Miramumla* King of *Africa*, whilest he was in his troubles, promising to him the Kingdom of *England*, if he conquer'd, and to renounce the Christian Faith. He was sad and dark of countenance, he was tall and fat, sluggish and idle of Nature; he seldom conquered the enemy, but by force, being inconstant; in adverse Fortune he was easily dejected. He was false in his promises, burdensom to his Subjects, troublesom to his Neighbours, and hated of all.

HENRY

HENRY *the Third, King of* England.

Anno 1217.

AFter *Johns* Deceaſe his Firſt-born Sonne *Henry*, not yet paſſed nine years old, obtain'd the Kingdom, not without ſome Controverſie of the Nobles: Some of the Nobility falling off to him, who a little before had made a Defection, and ſwear to King *Lewis*, yet *Lewis* with thoſe that followed him from *London*, with an Army of twenty thouſand men, won many Towns, till at laſt he came to the Caſtle at *Lincoln*, which a certain Noble Woman did manly defend, and cauſed him to ſtop, and an Army of the *Engliſh* coming on in the mean time, he was repulſed and conquered. Many of the *Engliſh* Nobility being taken that ſtood with him, beſides the Count of *Perch*, who preferred an honourable Death before a diſhonourable Life, yet he did not deſpair, but ſent for new Forces out of *France*, which were all almoſt deſtroyed in a fight at Sea. By theſe misfortunes he was forced to take Conditions, whereby there were granted to King *Lewis*, in reſpect of his Charge he had been at, a hundred and five thouſand Franks, he renouncing all

Right to the Kingdom of *England*, and promiſing faithfully to prevaile with his Father to reſtore all the Provinces in *France* that belonged to the *Engliſh*. But the King reſtored to the Rebellious Nobility, all the Lands that belonged unto them, and ſo *Lewis* leaving *England*, ſet ſail at *Dover* for *France*, having waged War unhappily in anothers Land.

The Union and Reſt of the Kingdom being thus eſtabliſhed for a time, ſuddenly there aroſe a new Faction of the Conſpirators. It was known to all what the Intention was, but what hopes they had was unknown to none, becauſe it was fortified but with ſmall Forces, and was unproſperouſly ſuppreſſed, thoſe being puniſhed that refuſed to ſubmit. At laſt all care is converted to the recovering of thoſe Provinces in *France*, that belonged to the *Engliſh*, large Tributes aud Impoſts being granted to the King. For though the *French* had promiſed Reſtitution of them, yet he would not yeeld them up, but by force of Arms, yet it was deferred untill the King being of riper years, ſhould ſtand upon his own Right, and ſhould govern the whole matter himſelf. In the meane while, thoſe fields that were fenced in for Parks by his Anceſtors, he laid them open, and reſtored them for Huſbandry, and to the common Good. But when he was grown up, he recalled again thoſe grants,

and

and what he gratified the People with in his Minority, he revoked, turning thoſe fields for his pleaſure into Parks again. And not content with this Injury, he alienated the hearts of his Subjects from him by many more unlawfull Acts. He aboliſhed the old Seal, and made a new one, and ſo extorted a great Summe of Money from his Subjects; Alſo he greatly drained them, under a pretence of a War with *France*, and managing the matter ſlothfully, he returned without a Victory, bringing with him out of *France* many of *Poicton*, that what Reward they had not deſired in *France*, he might pay them in *England*, whereby the beſt men were diſcharged of their Offices, and theſe vagabonds and ſtrangers were poſſeſſed of them. The King being now of ripe years, took to Wife *Eleoner* the Daughter of *Raymund* Earl of *Province*, whereby there grew no profit to his Affairs, but rather by reaſon of a thred-bare and beggarly Family, and her Kindred coming from all parts, as Crows to the Prey, he ſuffered great Detriment vvhich yet were highly eſteemed by him, the People much murmuring at it.

But whilſt the King that goes about to overthrow his Subjects Rights, which they labour to preſerve, all the Nobility being offended at the Promotion of Strangers, they enter into a

Conſpiracy; The Ring-leader whereof vvas *Richard Marſhall*, who durſt freely tell the King of his injuſtice, and required ſatisfaction. But the King to puniſh their Arrogancy, muſter'd a great Army of ſtrangers, and withall cals a Parliament, which is an Aſſembly of ſeverall Orders. The Nobility refuſe to be preſent, unleſs he would command the Biſhop of *Wincheſter Peter de Rupibus* of *Poictou*, and all his gang to forſake the Court, threatning withall, that unleſs ſatisfaction were made unto them, they would depoſe the King, and all ſtrangers that were his Adherents, and would chooſe another King; The King therefore commands all that were upon Knights-ſervice, and the Nobility to be preſent to fight for him, which they all refuſe to do, whereupon he confiſcated all their Goods, and diſtributed them amongſt thoſe of *Poictou*, and their perſons to be baniſhed, whereſoever they could be found. By vvhich threats they being frighted or corrupted by rewards, the chief of them fall off, whereby the reſt were weakned, and flie into *Wales*, to the Prince of that Countrey *Lionel*, drawn to hold part with them, to whom *Hugh Burgies* came eſcaping out of a Caſtle, where he was unjuſtly impriſoned. The King follows thoſe fugitives into *Wales*, but came back with diſgrace, doing nothing. But *Richard Marſhall* when he would

not

not return into the Kings favour, being drawn cunningly into *Ireland*, to look to his Eſtate, and there being accuſed of treaſon, was killed, though the King ſtrove to remove the envy of that deed from himſelf.

A Parliament being called, ſome men that had care of the Common-wealth, were thoſe that perſwaded the King to leave off War, and to make Peace with his Nobility; The King hearkned to their Councel, and recalling the Nobles out of *Wales*, he treats with them, whereby they are reſtored to their former Dignities, and ſtrangers that poſſeſſed their places, vvere removed from all places, and a great penalty laid upon them, yet ſome of them (as Fortune is inconſtant) were re-admitted into the Kings favour.

The King then ſeigning that all favour was for his own Subjects, extorted a great Summe of money from them; which yet he diſtributed amongſt the poor Kindred of the Queen, and her Father a poor Prince: And having promiſed before to exclude all ſtrangers from favour, (and alwayes to take counſel of his Subjects) he began now to eſteem them more; with which indignity the Nobility offended, enter upon a new Conſpiracy, to which, as the Leader and Chief, *Richard* the Kings Brother had given his Name, who being ſo bold as to tell the

the King of his faults to his teeth, doth forcibly dehort him from ſuch fallacies. The King was much incenſed with this, and ſeeing the Inclination of the *Londoners* towards the Conſpirators, calling a Parliament, and publiſhing the Conditions, he treats with them for Peace. But before it was come ſo far, the Earl of *Cornwall* the Kings Brother was drawn off to the contrary part, whereby the Nobility urged their matters more faintly, and ſo the Treaty could come to no Concluſion. The King now free from all Impediments, tyrannizeth more over the Nobles, the chief of the Conſpirators were baniſhed, or turned out of their Places. Nor did he leſs oppreſs the Clergy, putting ſtrangers into Church-Offices, at the Popes requeſt, diſpoſſeſſing the Nations, and laying heavy Taxes upon them, ſo that all hated him.

Henry purpoſing to make a new Expedition for *France*, asks Subſidies from his Parliament, which being denied, he was forced to borrow otherwhere; Nor yet did he ſpend it ſucceſsfully, after a years delay, and having done nothing well, concluding a diſgracefull Peace with the *French*.

But returning for *England*, he tyrannized over the Jews, and wreſted a grear Summe of money from them, which he yet conſumed with

with unſeaſonable Gifts very indiſcreetly; And ſo his Exchequer being conſumed, and Subſidies denied him from the Parliament, gave him occaſion of new Oppreſſions, and ſo drawing the means of the Church to himſelf, was a cauſe of great difference between him and the Pope. But the King being inconſtant, laid down the Bucklers, and yeelded to the Pope, who recovering his Goods in *England*, did again pole the poor people of the Kingdom with continual ſucking.

To this may be added, that there was a daily Conflux out of *France*, and other parts into *England* of this new Family, having ſome Relation to the King, this or that way, whoſe wants muſt be magnificently ſupplied, to the great detriment of the Common-wealth. The King grew ſtill poorer by it, and ſo applied himſelf to Rapines and Extortions, and ſold ſuch Furniture as belonged to the Crown, wreſting all the Moneys he could to pay thoſe he ſtood indebted to.

Then when he could no longer do it by ſuch inconvenient ways, he obtained a ſmall ſum of money from the *Londoners*, by threats and violence. And then turning to the Nobility, he asked a Subſidy of them in vain, and he found his Churchmen as backward, with whom he could do little or nothing.

Then

Then enterprizing an Expedition to the holy Land, to free the King of *France*, he called an Aſſembly of his Biſhops and Peers, from whom when he could not obtain one mite of Money, being like a mad man, he drove them all out of the Chamber; The Biſhop of *Ely* for that injury was excepted againſt by him. At laſt ſome help was afforded him, whereupon he was forced to confirm ſolemnly *Magna Charta*, but that Money which he had appointed for the holy Warre was quickly waſted, partly by Gifts, partly by Banquetting, and other Frauds invented for his own deſtruction. Alſo he had upon a vain hope redeemed the Kingdoms of *Sicily* for his Son *Edmund*, paying a great ſumme of Money to the Pope.

In the *interim*, the *Welſh* vexed with great injuries, fall away from the Prince, and to ſuppreſs theſe, and reduce them to Obedience, he ſtood in need of a new ſupply of Money, which at laſt by neat Devices and Inventions he wrung from them.

In the mean while *Richard* Earl of *Cornwall* the Kings Brother, at the ſuit of the Princes of *Germany*, is choſen King of the *Romans*, but ſhortly when he grew inſolent with importunate oppreſſions and revenges, he was put out of the place, and returned for *England* a poor Emperour, who went out a rich Earl.

But

But *Henry* that he might make up that Money, which the Pope had wiped him of, by a vain boaſt of the Kingdom of *Sicily*, he asks once more a Subſidy from his Nobles, vvho refuſing ſtifly, and the King preſſing for it, they fall to odds: Afterwards calling a new Parliament, which the Lords had procured for the Safety of the Kingdom, he was compelled by Oath, and his Son alſo to confirm it. At which time it was enacted, That the Kings Brother, with the men of *Poictiers* that remained in *England*, ſhould preſently depart the Kingdom. But a contagious Peſtilence ariſing, either naturally, or by ſome venom, theſe ſtrangers ſcattered when they departed. Many of the Nobility died, whereupon many were put to Death out of bare ſuſpicion, ſome are caſt into Priſon, and ſome are baniſhed. Nor did leſs evils for this afflict the *Engliſh*, for they that had the Charge of Correcting the Errours of others, did with all cruelty weed up the miſerable *Engliſh*, that now ſo many Lords as there were, ſo many Tyrants there were, and the ſervants were grown like their Maſters. And that they might ſtirre up the envy of the Subjects againſt the King, they caſt all the fault upon him, which he endeavoured to free himſelf from by his publick Writ, but all in vain, when he was compelled in a ſolemn Parliament

to

to give that Power he had given to twenty four choſen men before, to the Earls *Montfort*, and of *Gloceſter*, and to *Spencer*, taking an Oath to confirm it unto them.

In the mean while, *Richard* King of the *Romans*, being landed in *England*, *Henry* growing bolder by the return of his Brother, though he were poor, firſt demands a diſcharge of his Oath from the Pope, then he oppoſed himſelf againſt the Inſolency of the Nobility; He flies to help from the *French* King, who is choſen Umpire between *Henry* and the Nobles, to end the Controverſie, but when he did nothing, they break forth on all ſides into open Warre. The Count of *Leiceſter* drives forth the Earl of *Gloceſter*, and ſtorms his Caſtle, and laid a great Fine upon the Citizens. Then he took the Fort at *Worceſter*, and afterwards the Iſle of *Ely*, and the Caſtle of *Windſor*. But the King fearing leaſt he ſhould come ſo farre as *London*, thought it concerned him to make Peace with him. They agreed at laſt on theſe Conditions, That all the Caſtles ſhould be delivered up to the Lords, and all ſtrangers at a day appointed, ſhould forthwith depart the Kingdom, onely thoſe excepted who had a Licence given them to ſtay.

But the King calling a new Parliament, he drew ſome of the Nobility, eſpecially his own

Sons

Sons to his Party; to whom *John Comminus*, *Baily*, *Robert Bruſe*, and others from *Scotland* joyn'd themſelves: With theſe, being not a little confirmed, he denounceth Warre againſt the Earls of *Leiceſter* and *Gloceſter*, vvho did not at all excuſe themſelves; vvho ſeeing the King daily increaſe in Forces, levying a ſudden, but ſarre leſs Army, oppoſe the King; And here Fraud ſupplied the parts of Vertue, for ſetting their Banners behinde without Souldiers, they made a ſhew of a greater Army than they had. And Fortune helped a good Cauſe, for the Kings Forces being diſperſed, the greateſt part of them was oppreſſed and ſlain, the reſt ſaved themſelves by flight: But the King, the Prince, and Earl of *Cornwall*, and his Sonne *Henry*, and all the *Scotch* Nobility fell into the Enemies hands.

There had been an end of the King and his Fortune, leaſt a Contention ariſing between the Earls of *Leiceſter* and *Gloceſter*, had given cauſe to a hot Conteſt, and afterwards to a ſharp Warre, where *Leiceſter* being too weak, yet fell valiantly with wonderfull glory.

By the ſame Fortune, *Simon* and *Guido Montforts*, the Sons of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, were baniſhed, one into *Italy*, the other into *France*, where afterwards they gave their name to moſt Illuſtrious Families. Alſo their Mother a gallant woman,

woman, being gone a little before into *France*, ended her Life in a Nunnery.

A new Contention being risen amongst the Nobles, they sound the Trumpet to Battel again; Also the *Welsh* who had helped Earl *Montfort*, are remanded to be slain. But Peace being confirmed on all sides, this trouble abated without blood.

Rest now obtained at home, *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, at the request of the *French* King, goes forth toward the Warre in *Palestina*: But *Richard* once King of the *Romans* died in the mean time, whom *Henry* himself followed shortly after, (whilst he studied to repair the losses he sustained by War.) having Raigned 56 years, and was buried at *Westminster*.

EDWARD *the First, King of* England.

Anno 1272.

WHen *Henry* died, *Edward* stayed in *Palestina*, being intent about the holy Warre, where he underwent a grievous danger, having received three wounds from his adversary with a poisoned weapon. But he was cured by the wonderfull Piety of his Wife, who with her mouth in time sucked out the venom from

from the wounds. In his way, being made more certain of his Fathers death, he came at laſt over-land into his Countrey, and was inaugurated King.

At the beginning of his Reign he uſed the Nobility well; but he to abate the inſolence of the Clergie, commanded their vvealth to be brought into his Exchequer, and he afflicted them by other means, and ſo drew upon him their envy. The *Welſh*, whoſe cuſtom it was on all occaſions to make new Commotions, now afreſh under their Leader *Lionel*, riſe up againſt *Edward*, and rage with wonderfull pride, but this tempeſt ſoon vaniſhed, for *Eleoner* the Daughter of *Simon Montfort*, eſpouſed to *Lionel*, whilſt ſhe came out of *France* by Sea to her Husband, was taken in the way, whom he was forced to redeem at a great ranſom, promiſing alſo to *Edward* continual Homage, and granting his Brother *David* to the *Engliſh*, who was highly eſteemed by *Edward*. But *Lionels* obedience laſted not above three years, for his Wife *Eleoner* being dead, he breaks forth into new rebellions. Alſo *David* forgetting the great love of King *Edward* to him, fell off preſently to his Brother, and ſo with joynt Forces they enter *England*, and did ſome miſchief to *Edward*; both vvonderfull inflamed by a falſe Propheſie of *Merlin*, vvhereby the Crown of

Brutus was promiſed to *Lionel*; But the Battel being ſet, *Lionel* was killed by a private Souldier, and his Head was brought to the King, who cauſed it to be faſtened on a Pole, and to be Crowned with joy, and ſet up on the Tower of *London*. The lot of *David* was like to his Brothers, vvho being taken in *Wales*, was drawn with a Horſe to the place of execution, and there beheaded, and his Head ſet by his Brothers, and his four quarters were ſent to the four principal Cities of *England*. So *Edward* revenged the Rebellion of the *Welch*, and the death of *Alphonſus* his firſt-born, who was killed in the ſame Battel.

But a greater cloud hung over his head from *Scotland*. For *Alexander* the third, King of *Scotland*, whilſt he rode the Great Horſe, fell with him, and ſo died, leaving his Daughter *Margaret* to inherit; but ſhe, ſhortly after her Father, died alſo, leaving the Kingdom to ten Corrivals who ſtrove for it. *Edward* was choſen Umpire by them all to ſearch their Titles: but he reduced all their pretences to two eſpecially, namely, *John Bayly* and *Robert Bruſe*, vvho with equal right affected the Kingdom; whilſt the matter ſticks between them, *Edward* ſets on *Bruſe*, promiſing to him the Kingdom of *Scotland* for ever, ſo he would do him Homage for it: But *Bruſe* refuſed it, preferring his

his Countries Liberty before his own Honour; but *Baily* yielded to thoſe conditions, and ſo gained the Kingdom of *Scotland*, but the ill will of all his Countrey-men. Envy againſt him increaſed for refuſing juſtice upon the death of the Earl of *Fife*, vvho was ſlain, for *Baily* exempted *Albermeth* that ſlew him, from puniſhment; vvhereupon *Baily* was cited to appear before *Edwards* Tribunal, vvas forced to plead his cauſe. He was angry for this diſgrace, and returns to his Kingdom, and afterwards denied Homage to *Edward*, and proclaimed Warre, making a Covenant vvith the *French* King. Hence aroſe the cauſe of a moſt bloody Warre between the two Nations, vvhich laſted for 300 years, only ſome feigned ceſſations paſſing between.

Armies are Muſtered on both ſides, and the *Engliſh* giving the firſt onſet on the *Scotch*, ſlew abundance of them, and vvon many Cities and Caſtles; by vvhich loſs *Bruſius* was conſtrained to beg for Peace, vvhich was granted, but he himſelf was carried Captive into *England*, and being afterwards ſet at liberty, he ended his dayes in *France*, expecting in vain the reſtitution of his goods. And ſo *Edward* returned for *England*, leaving after him *John Varamius* Earl of *Suſſex* his Embaſſador, and *Hugh Chryſingamius* his Treaſurer, to take

care of the *Scotch* buſineſs. But a little after this, the *Scotch*, vvhen the King was gone into *France*, making head againſt the Kings Miniſters, having *William Valla* for their Captain, they killed *Hugh Chryſinganius*, and vvith him 6000 *Engliſh*. But the King came back for *England*, commanded that his Court ſhould be held at *Yorke*; and preſently levying an Army, he aſſaulted the *Scotch* afreſh at *Forkirk*, and though he himſelf vvere diſmounted from his Horſe, that was frighted with the hollow of the enemy, and vvas dangerouſly wounded, two ribs being broken in his body, yet he made a great ſlaughter amongſt them, 40000 Horſe and Foot of them being ſlain; Only *Valla* with a ſmall handful of men eſcaped by flight from the fury of the enemy. All the Noble mens goods are made forfeit to the *Engliſh*, and they were all made Tributaries, and to ſwear the third time to be true to King *Edward*.

But the falſe *Scot* kept his word but a very ſhort time, for *Bruſius* the Son of *Robert* being made King in a Turbulent manner, new commotions ariſe, for he fearing the power of *John Cominus*, cauſed him wickedly to be murdered in the Temple of *Dumfriſe*. When *Edward* heard this, he vvas wonderfully incenſed: Preſently having raiſed a gallant Army he marcheth into

into *Scotland*, not meaning to ceaſe, till he had brought down the uſurper of that Kingdom. The Earl of *Pembroke*, who was marched before vvith his Brigade, lighting ſuddenly on *Bruſe*, deſtroyed all his men, from whoſe hands the King himſelf hardly eſcaped, he led a diſhonourable life in Caves, Dens, and Crags of Mountains, ſeeking his fortune in other matters. His Brothers falling into the power of the enemy, were put to extream tortures as Traytors.

The King fierce with the madneſs of Revenge, ſpared no mans life, but ſlew all he met withal. The Earl of *Athol* alſo, though he were of the Kings blood, vvas ſent to *London*, and hanged there: ſo and by ſuch like wayes were the followers of *Bruſe* puniſhed. Yet *Bruſe*, though he vvanted almoſt any to follow him, did not give out, but collecting a handfull of Souldiers, he ſets upon the Earl of *Pembroke* ſuddainly, and put him to the worſt with great loſs and ſlaughter, and he drove the Earl of *Gloceſter* into the Caſtle of *Ayrs*, and beſieged him there, until *Edward* coming to his relief, he was forced to fly to his old ſculking holes.

In the mean time a new Warre breaks forth with the *French* King *Philip* the Fair, by a controverſie between the ſubjects of either King, and ariſing from pretended injury; for Kings

that envy one the other do eaſily break into open hatred. The King of *England* alſo was juſtly angry, and ſought all occaſions of wrong greedily, by reaſon that *Henry* his Couſin, Son to *Richard* the Emperour, was killed by the Earl *Montforts* Son, at which wickedneſs the *French* connived. In a fight at Sea firſt a great deſtruction was brought upon the *French* at the entrance of the River *Sion* and elſewhere. And *Edward* when a day was appointed for him as a ſtipendary to plead his cauſe before King *Philip*, he refuſed to appear, and the Hoſtage he did willingly before, he now refuſed to do; vvhereupon a great Army being raiſed, *Philip* enters upon the Territories of *Edward* in *France* by force of Arms. The King of *England*, by the aſſiſtance of neighbour Princes, the Earl of *Flanders*, the Duke of *Brabant*, and others, to which was joyned the help that came from *Adolphus* of *Naſſaw* the *Roman* Emperour, who had promiſed it, preſently marched againſt the King of *France*, but finding the *French* divided into parts, and defrauded of the aſſiſtance promiſed them by the Emperour, when he had held his Winter Quarters at *Gaunt*, not without murmuring of the Citizens, and great want amongſt his Souldiers; at the beginning of the Spring, truce being made with the *French* for three years, the King took *Margaret* the Dukes

ſiſter

ſiſter to Wife (for *Leoner* died in the former expedition againſt the *Scot*) and the Daughter of *Philip* being betrothed to King *Edwards* Son, he retreated for *England*.

Laſtly, making his incurſion into *Scotland*, when he held his Winter-Quarters at *Carlile*, where being taken with a Dyſentery in the way, and the diſeaſe increaſing, he died at *Burgh* upon ſands, when he had reigned thirty-four years, and lyeth buried at *Weſtminſter*.

He was taller then all the reſt, of a ſorrowfull countenance, for chaſtity like to his Father, but in fortitude far before him; he was excellent for Judgement and Continence.

Edvvard *the Second, King of* England.

Anno 1308.

Edward ſirnamed *Carnarvan*, by ſucceſſion came to the Throne when his Father was dead. But he at the very beginning ſhewed what his future Tyranny would be, eſpecially in turning upſide down what his Father had left in command by his Will; and calling *Gaveſtone* from baniſhment, a young man of a moſt baſe life, who for his inſolency was exiled by his

Fathers order, and in his laſt vvords forbad him not to recall him, vvho afterwards gave cauſe of great diſſentions; for when the King beſtowed immoderate gifts upon him, he made the Nobility envious againſt him, and himſelf poor. But his Father being yet not interred, he endeavoured to conclude the Matrimony with King *Philip's* Daughter, that was contracted when King *Edward* lived, which is performed with great preparation of the Nobles, and eſpecially of *Gaveſtone*, four Kings being preſent, and three Queens except the Bride. The Dowry vvas the Dukedom of *Aquitan*, which the *French* King had poſſeſſed himſelf of. But he being returned into *England*, the Nobles were offended by reaſon of the too great power of *Gaveſtone*, they deny the ſolemnity of the Coronation, unleſs he would baniſh this inſolent odious man from his Court and Kingdom. The King ſeemed to hearken to it, and ſo is inagurated with his Queen in the Kingdom by the conſent of all. But vvhen as he ſhould baniſh *Gaveſtone*, he highly promoted him, the Nobility not a little murmuring at it.

In the mean vvhile the chief power was in *Gaveſtone*, the Nobles had no authority; and that he might precede the reſt in glory, a Tilting was appointed, where he obtained the greateſt praiſe.

praiſe. His valour was worthy of reward, but that the inſolent man turned all to the contempt of the Nobility. In the mean while a Parliament was called, wherein, amongſt the reſt, it was Enacted, That the Decrees of *Magna Charta* ſhould be obſerved; Strangers ſhould be put out of their Offices, and that all things ſhould be done in a ſolemn ſitting of the Senate, nor ſhould the King go out of the Land, the Parliament being ignorant of it, or againſt it, nor ſhould make Warre againſt any, and that *Gaveſtone* ſhould be baniſhed.

Whereupon he is ſent away for *Ireland*, not as a baniſhed man, but as Preſident of the Iſland, vvhere alſo behaving himſelf vvell he had deſerved commendation and reward. But the King by prepoſterous counſell, a contract being made for him with the ſiſter of the Earl of *Gloceſter*, being impatient of his abſence, called him back from his baniſhment, and preſently ſettled him in his former grace and favour. But he to give the King thanks, by cunning flattery, ſucked the King of all he had, that he left him ſcarce ſufficient for his neceſſity. The Nobles in the mean while hating his inſolency, threaten a general revolt from the King, unleſs he vvould ſend away his proud ſubject. But *Gaveſtone*, when he had wandred ſome time in *France* and *Flanders*, returns privately into *England*,

England, being generally hated, being the more confident by reaſon of the Kings and his Father in Law the Earl of *Glocester*s favour. The King received him moſt friendly, and that his arrival might be concealed from the Nobles, the King takes a journey with him toward *York*. The Nobility that had knowledge of it enter a Conſpiracy, to which all ſubſcribed but the Earl of *Gloceſter* : And they make *Thomas* Earl of *Lancaſter* the head of the faction; and ſo they laid a neceſſity on the King, either to deliver up *Gaveſton* into the hands of the Lords, or elſe to ſend him out of the Land. But *Edward* being blinde vvith fooliſh favour, would not hearken to the Lords, but ſhut him up in a ſtrong Caſtle, that ſo he might eſcape the envy of the Nobility. But they being ſworn together, beſiege the place, and compell him to ſurrender miſerably, and having taken him they cut off his head. Three things were left in charge to *Edward* by his dying Father, and vvere commanded in his Will, namely, That he ſhould carry his Fathers bones along with him, till he had conquered *Scotland* : That he ſhould expend 30000lb upon the holy Warre : And that he ſhould not recal *Gaveſton*. He obeyed not the two latter, for that money decreed for the Holy Warre he beſtowed on *Gaveſton* when he was come back, for the third we ſhall ſee what

what he did. The King of *Scots Bruſius*, who had long ſince intelligence of King *Edwards* ſlothfulneſs, would not paſs over ſuch an opportunity of well managing his buſineſs, levying an Army, preſently reduced all *Scotland* into his power. And not therewith content, he enters the borders of *England*, and deſtroys all by fire and ſword. *Edward* to repulſe force by force, raiſed an Army of an hundred thouſand Souldiers, better fitted with furniture than valour, which was eaſily vanquiſhed by the *Scotch*, that were ſcarce 30000, joyning craft and valour together. The chief of the Nobility in this fight were either ſlain or taken Captives. The Earl of *Gloceſter* himſelf, when he had given ſufficient tokens of his fortitude, fighting valiantly in the head of the Army, was killed, the reſt ſaved themſelves by flight. This made the hearts of the *Engliſh* to fail, and a great part of the Noble and Commons revolted to the Conquerours, by a fearful example of perjury puniſhed. *Bruſe* following his Victories, enters upon *Ireland* with an Army, a great part of it he over-runne, and depopulated it very farre: Alſo he was ſaluted King of the ſame Iſland, the inhabitants falling to him abundantly. And he ruled three years, untill the Primate of *Armath*, and *Berningam* the chief Judge in *Ireland*, raiſing a great Army,

ſet

ſet upon the Conquerour, and take him with a greater ſlaughter of his men, and cut off his Head. The *Scots* almoſt mad with the death of their King, waſte the Borders of *England*, ſo farre as *York* with ſword and fire. To moderate their Inſolence, a great Army was raiſed of the *Engliſh*, who marched toward *York*. But diſcord growing between the Commanders, before they ſaw the enemy, they either ſlipt away, or returned home. Then *Barwick* by the Treaſon of *Peter Spalding* was delivered up to the Enemies hands, which *Edward* preſently laid ſiege to. But the Earl of *Lancaſter* failing away with his men, by reaſon of a quarrel, the *Scotch* in the mean time making havock of all, and conquering divers Cities and Caſtles, he was forward to retreat. To this it fell out that the *Yorkſhire* men raiſing a great power of the common people, and ſetting upon the *Scots*, were unhappily beaten and killed by them. The King removing his ſiege from *Barwick*, following the *Scots* that were laden with the prey, and the ſpoil, but he was fruſtrated of his end, they having marched another way. The next year entring *Scotland*, becauſe the Enemy had waſted all before his coming, by reaſon of hunger and want, was compelled to return back again. But the *Scotch* following him, and coming ſuddenly upon him, he ſuffered a great loſſe,

loſſe, and hardly eſcaped himſelf, and ſo finding himſelf too weak for the Enemy, he begged a Truce for two yeares. But he was vexed with far greater troubles than theſe at home; For *Gaveſton* being dead, the younger *Spencer* ſucceeded in the Kings Grace and Favour, vvho after he had obtained the Government of the Common-wealth in as high a manner as *Gaveſton* had, he could not chooſe but fall under the ſame malice of the Nobility. But the cover of this envy was too unjuſt that it could be hid by a publick conteſt, ſome other occaſion muſt be ſought for. They all with one conſent ask of the King, that he would keep entire the Conditions formerly granted, threatning him with a revolt, and ſo they raiſe great Forces for War, but the Prelates interpoſing, they made Peace on both parts.

But ſhortly after a Parliament being called, the King complains openly of the wrong they had done him, and of *Gaveſtons* death; But the Nobility ſay they had committed no ſinne in ſo doing, but growing remorſe by the admonitions of the Queen, and the Earl of *Gloceſter*, they ask pardon of the King upon their knees; They eaſily obtain'd it, which was granted to them under the Kings Broad-Seal.

Now all the diſſention ſeemed to be laid aſleep, but as fire raked up in aſhes, is kindled by

by any little winde, ſometimes into a great flame, ſo there needed but a ſmall blaſt to produce the former troubles. The firſt occaſion of defection was given, becauſe the wife of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, with which he had a long time lived quietly, was taken from him vvith the Counties of *Lincoln* and *Salisbury*, by *Richard Sanmartin* a very deformed man, who ſaid he had conjugal cuſtom with her before, which thing ſhe openly confeſſed when ſhe was demanded concerning it. Another occaſion was given, when at *Whitſontide* a certain woman riding ridiculouſly on horſeback in fools habit, did go into the Court and upbraid the King with his ingratitude toward his faithful Miniſters. A third, when a certain Knight that had a packet of the Kings was intercepted, wherein was written a deſire to the King of *Scots* to cut off the Earl of *Lancaſter*, whereupon not a few fell from the King to that Earl. A fourth, when a certain mad man *John Poudras* counterfeiting himſelf to be King *Edward*, and feared not to ſay, that *Edward* they miſtook for their King was falſly ſuppoſed to be ſo, which madneſſe he paid dearly for by the torture he was put to. But the greateſt of all was, that a certain Baron, *William Breviſius*, who had ſpent the greateſt part of his Eſtate in Riot and Whoring, would needs ſell the reſt by Port-ſale, which

which *Humphrey Bohun* gaping after, asking leave of the King, did transact vvith *William* for them. Also both the *Roger Mortimers* being ignorant of other Competitours, cheapned the Bargain, and *Spencer* had obtained immediate leave from the King to buy them, and was preferred before any other. It is a wonder what hatred he drew upon himself by this matter. Now all the Nobility came together, and entred a conspiracy, crying out, that the *Spencers* both Father and Sonne were Traitors, Corrupters of the King, and plagues to the Common-wealth, and at last they fell to their Arms. They come in haste to *London* with their Army, and with leave granted, they enter the City, and make their complaints to the King, which he yeelded to by the Intercession of many. Lastly, The *Spencers* were banished, but shortly after, vvhen the Archbishop of *Canterbury* contended in a Common-Councel of a *London*-Senate, that that banishment was unjust, the *Spencers* are called home again, the King being no wayes unwilling to it. This drove the Nobility on, bnt another mischief moved the King. For the Queen taking her Progress toward *Canterbury*, when as she would have diverted towards the Lord of *Baldesmire*, she was dishonourably shut out, and was forced to turn away to some other place. Of which

matter

matter ſhe complained to the King, and it made him extream angry, who now doth think of nothing but revenge for that injury; collecting ſuddainly a Band of Souldiers, he aſſaulted that Caſtle; which when he had overcome, the Governour of it *Thomas Culpeper*, was hanged, and *Baldeſmire* with his wife and children was caſt into Priſon, and all his goods Confiſcate. And the Kings blood being now hot, he proceeded farther, and reſolved to make Warre upon the Nobles, but they finding that his Army increaſed, part returned to their Obedience, and part fell to their Arms; But their Army being either ſlipt away or vanquiſhed, ſome were killed in the fight, the reſt were taken, amongſt whom was the Earl of *Lancaſter*, who was beheaded before his own Caſtle, the reſt were either hanged or beheaded, that *England* was never more ſorrowfully wet with Noble Blood.

Now the laſt and worſt miſchief of all hanged over his head, for the King of *France* for the Poſſeſſions that *Edward* had in *France*, required Homage from him for them, but *Edward* refuſing, he entr'd his Provinces with an Army. At length Queen *Iſabella*, *Edwards* wife was ſent to intreat him not to waſte his Countrey: ſhe went willingly, partly to performe the Kings Commands, partly to complain to her Brother.

Brother. For *Edward* by the Inſtigation of *Spencer* was no little eſtranged from her, and had offended her with great contempt. *Roger Mortimer* went with her, with whom the Queen held unlawfull Familiarity, vvhich when the King underſtood, he ſent to the *French* King ſome that ſhould deſire him to ſend home the Queen with the Prince her Sonne. But ſhe not returning is baniſhed out of all the Kings Dominions, and Garriſons made to drive her off, if ſhe came againſt the Kings Will. But ſhe flying to the Earl of *Hannonia*, Matrimony being contracted between Prince *Edward*, and the Earls Sonne, ſhe procured a good Army from him, *John* the Earls Brother being Generall; Setting ſail they land about *Harwith*, to vvhom immediately *Henry* Earl of *Lancaſter*, and other Nobles joyned themſelves. The King receiving news of it, was wonderfully frighted, he left *London* without ſtay, the City being addicted to the Queen, and purpoſing to flie into *Lundy* Iſland, by a Tempeſt he was driven into *Wales*. In the mean while the *Londoners*, that they might ſhew their loves to the Queen, cut off the Heads of *Gualter Stapleton* Treaſurer of *England* moſt cruelly, becauſe he was addicted to the King, and ſome others alſo. Nor did the Queen do leſs at *Briſtol*, killing *Hugh* Father to *Spencer*, who was ninety years old, cauſing

him to be dragged to Execution, pulling his heart out alive. Then she sent part of her Army to finde out the King, *Henry* Earl of *Lancaster* being the chief, and *Rice Paulinus* a *Welshman*, who because he knew every passage of the Countrey exactly, he lead the Earl to the Monastery of *Neth*, where the King hid himself, where presently both he, with *Spencer*, *Robert Baldoch*, and *Simon Redyng*, is delivered into the hands of his Enemies, and is left to the Custody of the Earl of *Leicester*, who entertained him with all respect, as it was fit a captive King should be. But *Edmund* Earl of *Arundel*, *John Daniel*, and *Thomas Micheldem*, are beheaded at the request of *Mortimer*. But *Spencer* vvho was now Earl of *Gloceſter*, is now with *Simon Redyng* drawn to Execution, and being first hanged, they were afterwards beheaded and quartered, and their heads set up on *London* Bridge, the quarters were sent to the chief Cities, but *Baldoch* was famished to death in Prison. Then a Parliament is called, vvherein they consulted to depose the King, and to Crown the Prince his Sonne *Edward*. But he being farre more Religious than his Mother, would not accept the Crown, unless his Father vvould resign it willingly. Some are sent to perswade this miserable King, and the unhappy man did yeeld easily to it. A day is set for the delive-

delivering up his Title, and *Edward* cloathed in black, comes into the Chamber, where they were gathered together that ſhould receive his Abdication, but he ſcarce ſaw the proviſion made for his renunciation, but he ſunk down half dead in a ſwound, and with much ado being refreſhed by the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, he came to himſelf. But when he heard the cauſe of the Aſſembly, he anſwered, That as it was diſpleaſing to him that his Subjects were ſo much offended at him, ſo he was vvell pleaſed that they had made his Son *Edward* King in his ſtead; and ſo the Solemnities being rightly performed, the buſineſs was at laſt accompliſhed. Then an allowance being granted to *Edward*, he remained in the Cuſtody of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and was well uſed. Alſo ſo great a ſtipend vvas granted to the Queen-Mother, that there was ſcarce any thing left for the King and Queen. Nor was the furious woman yet pleaſed, but went about to infringe the Liberty her Husband enjoyed with the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and by the counſel of *Adam Torleton* Biſhop of *Hereford*, power is granted to two Knights *Thomas Gorney* and *John Matrevers* to carry the King to ſome other place. They hewed him filthily, cutting his hair moſt ridiculouſly, and his beard alſo, that he might not be known, at laſt they brought

him to *Barclay* Caſtle.

After he had loſt his Kingdom, they conſult concerning his Life. Firſt, They thought by unwholſome food to deſtroy him, then by filthy ſtinks of carcaſes, and laſtly by poyſon, but neither prevailed. Then the Letters of the Biſhop of *Hereford* the moſt wicked Counſellour, were ſent to his Keepers, by which he checks them heavily for dealing ſo well with him that was not fit to be ſo kindly uſed, adding in the end, *Doe not feare to kill* Edward, *'tis good*; which was interpreted by them, as they pleaſed, who thereupon fell upon the miſerable King in his Bed, and ſtrive with the Blankets to ſtrangle him. Nor were they content with this, but they thruſt a hot Iron into his Fundament, and ſo burned his Bowels (a moſt hideous Example of Cruelty) and deſtroyed him in a dolefull manner. But theſe Parricides when they looked for a Reward for their Villany, they received a juſt Reward of it; For being called in queſtion for their Lives, they were baniſhed. Afterwards *Gorney* loſt his Head, *Matrevers* after a long baniſhment at laſt died miſerably.

This King vvas of an excellent Stature of Body, wonderfull ſtrong, but too much given to drunkenneſs, and ſo not ſecret of his Counſels; he was immoderate toward thoſe he loved;

For

For Love, if it be with Moderation is a moſt noble affection of the ſoul, and if that be wanting, it is the worſt paſſion of all the reſt. He was more unhappy than unfortunate. He exceeded all in Chaſtity, for he left no Baſtards behind him; In Moderation, for he uſed no unjuſt wayes to pole his Subjects of their Moneys. As his Subjects hated him in his life time, ſo his memory was dear unto them after his Death.

EDWARD *the Third*, *King of* England *and* France.

Anno 1328.

HIs Father being depoſed, *Edward* was ſaluted King, ſirnamed *Windſor*, not yet having paſſed his fifteenth year, and therefore he had Governours that ſhould rule the Kingdome in his Name. But the chief Power remain'd in the Queen and *Mortimer*, either the Nobility winking at it, or allowing it. The firſt care was to fall upon the *Scotch*, for *Robert Bruſe* deſpiſing the young King, entred the Borders of *England* vvith his Army, vvhereupon an Army is raiſed, joyning thoſe of the

hanſe Towns, which the Queen brought with her. But when divers people hardly could be held together in reſpect of the diverſity of their Manners, there grew in a ſhort time a great diſcord between both Nations; ſo nothing ſucceeding well, they came back again, and afterwards the *Engliſh* conſented to baſe conditions of Peace; A Marriage being contracted between *David* Prince of *Scotland*, and *Joan* Siſter to *Edward*. Alſo *Edward* Married his Wife that was promiſed him, *Philippa* the Earl of *Hannonia's* Daughter, being yet in their Nonage. Then the Souldiers of *Hannonia*, who cauſed the Diſcord, are ſent home, And *Edmund* Earl of *Kent* accuſed of Treaſon, becauſe he had endeavoured to reſtore the Kingdom to his Brother *Edward*, was condemned, and loſt his Head. But the great Revenues of the Queen, which ſhe had drawn to her ſelf by a Grant of Parliament were reſtrained to a thouſand *per annum*, and ſhe was impriſoned in a Caſtle; and *Mortimer* being convicted of Adultery with her, and being taken in the act, was preſently hanged: In the mean while *Philip* the Fair King of *France* died, and the Kingdom was devolved to his Sonnes, *Henry*, *Lewis*, and *Charles* the Fair, who all reigned in their turns, but *Charles* dying vvithout an Heir-male, lawful Succeſſion failed in him. *Edward* vvho

was

was of kinne by the Sister of *Charles*, vvho was the Daughter to *Philip* the Fair, supposing that the Kingdom fell by descent to him, found *Philip Valesius*, Brother to *Philip* the Fair to be his enemy, for women by the common rule of *France* are excluded by the Salique Law. Wherefore *Philip* was prefer'd before *Edward*, and the King of *England* was forced to do him Homage for the Lands he possessed in *France*. But these things gave cause afterwards for a grievous Warre and sharp coutention.

In the mean time *Edward Baily* Son to *John*, affecting the Kingdom of *Scotland*, descending from his Ancestors, *Robert Bruse* being novv dead, made Warre upon the *Scots*, and by a successfull fight (or else helped by the Forces of *Edward*) brought almost the whole Nation under him (whilst *David* a young King trifled the time away in *France*) and so doing Homage to the King of *England*, he held it as from him in Chief.

In the said time the Isle of *Man* is Conquered by *William Montacute* Earl of *Salisbury*, vvho therefore was honoured vvith the Title of King of *Man*.

Edward now come to age, by the Instigation of *Robert Atrebas*, who was fled out of *France* into *England*, intends a Warre vvith *France*, making a Confederacy vvith the Dukes and

Earls of *Gelderland*, *Gulic*, *Cleave*, and the Hanſe-Towns, and of *Brabant*. The *French* alſo foreſeeing this Tempeſt, made friendſhip with the Biſhop of *Leige*, *John* King of *Bohemia*, the Earl of *Lutzenburg*, the Palatine *Albertus*, *Otho* of the Houſe of *Auſtrich*, and *Ameſius* Earl of *Genoa*.

Wherefore *Edward* ſail'd into *Flanders*, bearing the Title of the King of *France* (thoſe of *Flanders* being the cauſe of it) and then he entred the Borders of *France*. *Philip* alſo invaded *Aquitan*, and though the Armies of both Kings were in ſight one of the other, and ready to fall on, yet they both departed without fighting. *Edward* in the mean while to ſee to his buſineſs at home, returned for *England*, leaving *William Montacute*, and the Earl of *Suffolk* to take care of the Warre, both of them behaved themſelves valiantly, yet were taken and brought to *Paris*.

But *Edward* ſuppoſing it was in vain to ſtay at the report of this news, provided for his return for *France*, and finding a ſtrong Navy of King *Philips* in the Haven of *Sluſe*, he collecting a great Fleet ſet upon the *French*, and utterly deſtroyed their Navy, killing then 30000 *French*, with thoſe that were drowned and came to their ends other wayes.

Then he laid ſiege to *Tourney*, which Town was

was so well defended by the Duke of *Burgundy*, and the Earl of *Armeniac*, that his whole Army being dispersed, he lost about 4000 men, *Edward* was much enraged with this loss, and challenged *Philip* to fight a Duel with him, but the business came not so far, because it was taken up.

Yet the besieging of *Tourney* was no whit neglected, and *Philip* did what he could to free the City, but *Robert* King of *Sicily* interceding, and especially *Joan Valois*, *Philips* sister, there is a cessation made for two years.

In the *interim* the *Scots* that were enemies to *Bayly's* Government, calling their King *David* out of *France*, they make War upon *Edward*, and invading *Northumberland* with a strong Army, they miserably destroy all by fire and sword, sparing no sex nor condition. But at the sudden approach of *William Montacute*, they are afflicted with some loss, and being frighted at the coming of *Edward*, sounding a retreat, they returned for *Scotland*, but *Edward* following their Armies overtook them, and wearying them with some light skirmishes, he forced them to a cessation for two years.

John Earl *Montfort*, whilst he strives to make good his Title to *Britany*, is taken by King *Philip*: but his Wife seeking help from King *Edward*, easily procured it (*Mary* the Kings Daughter

Daughter being eſpouſed to the Earls Son) the care of that expedition vvas firſt committed to *Gualter Mani* a valiant Gentleman, and then to *Robert Atrebas*. In the mean time *Baily* being driven out of his Kingdom of *Scotland*, and by *Edward* made Governour of *Barwick*, tels *Edward* that the *Scots* had not kept their Covenants; vvhereupon *Edward* moves ſuddenly with an Army againſt the *Scots*, but there was nothing done but the ceſſation of Arms renewed.

In the *interim*, *Robert Atrebas*, with *Gualter Mani*, and ſome other Nobles, after a great tempeſt, and Sea-fight, arrived at a Town of *Britain* (which is commonly called *Vannes*) and going on Land, ſet on the City that was a Garriſon in a Hoſtile manner, and ſuddainly became Maſters of it; but by the deſperate violence of ſome of the Nobility, the *French* wan it again, and wounded *Robert*, vvhereof he died ſhortly after in *England*. But *Edward* himſelf moving into *Britany*, laid a new ſiege to the *Vannes*; and *John* Duke of *Normandy* coming ſuddenly, they both make themſelves ready for Battel, but by the interceſſion of Pope *Clement* the ſixt, Truce was made for ſome few moneths, yet it laſted not, who was the cauſe of it is uncertain; they again prepare for their Arms, by which means *Henry* of *Lancaſter*

Lancaſter ſubdued many Towns in *Guyan*, and in other Provinces, and then he removed to *Bourdeaux* for his Winter Quarters.

Philip that he might not loſe his Countrey by ſloth, levying a great Army, regained *Miremontium* a *Franc Town*, and *Engoleſm.* But when *Lancaſter* was too weak for the great Army of *Philip*, *Edward* came to his aſſiſtance with more Forces, bringing with him his Son Prince of *Wales*, that was yet in his Non-age (for he was ſcarce 15 years old) that he might be trained up in the Warres, who preſently took many Towns, and then he marched toward *Picardy* and *Pontium*, and he either vanquiſhed or deſtroyed all places in the way. Then he paſſed over *Somes*, a wonderfull example of his Valour, the enemy looking on, and he diſcomfited *Gondomar* more by fear than force.

In the mean time *Philip* ſtay'd with his Army at the Temple of St *Germans*, and being enraged with ſo great a loſs of his men, ſets *Edward* a day to fight with him in Battell; he had pitched his Camp at *Creſſen*, expecting with his Enſignes *Philip* his enemy: The Armies both meet, and the Trumpets ſound to Battel, wherein appeared the wonderfull courage of *Edwards* both Father and Soune, that day the *Engliſh* got the Victory, and the *French* were routed and

and ruined, the King hardly eſcaped himſelf, and there were found ſlain about 30000 men, the chief vvhereof were *John* King of *Bohemia*, *Charles Alencon*, and other chief Nobles 1500. Another loſs fell after this Victory, upon the Archbiſhop of *Roan*, who loſt about 7000 Souldiers.

Nor was this the end of their Victories, for it went ſucceſſively in *England* againſt the *Scots* in the Kings abſence, their King *David* with the greateſt Noble men were taken priſoners, and 15000 Souldiers were ſlain in the fight, and the reſt were diſperſed.

Nor did the General *Thomas Dagovort* fight with leſs good fortune in *Britany*, for the Counteſs of *Montfort*; the principal of the *French* Nobility being taken and killed.

Edward being more high by ſo many and great Victories, neglecting *Amiens* and the Town of *Abbas*, he laid ſiege to *Calais*, that was of great moment, and moſt convenient for the *Engliſh* affairs, whilſt *Lancaſter* overran all *Guyan*, vanquiſhed thoſe of *Xanton* and *Poictiers*, and being loaded with the ſpoil, he returned to *Bourdeaux*. In the meanwhile *Philip* going about to relieve thoſe of *Calais*, drew near with his Forces, and when he had in vain provoked *Edward* to Battel, having done nothing, he returns toward *Paris*: So they of *Calais*

Calais being out of hopes of relief, began to treat for Conditions, and it was agreed upon on both ſides, that ſix of the principal Citizens, ſhould come vvith nothing on but their ſhirts, with Halters about their necks, and ſubmit themſelves to King *Edward*, all the reſt to have free pardon. Theſe, though they did moſt humbly upon their knees crave for pardon, yet were condemned to be hanged, but at the Queens requeſt they were ſet at liberty, and ſent away with money to defray their charges as they went.

The King and Queen enter the City in Triumph, they command the old Inhabitants to leave the City, and kept the place ſtocked with *Engliſh* families.

The *French* ſtrive to regain by craft vvhat they had loſt by Valour, for *Godfrey Charnus* the Governour of St *Odomar*, had corrupted vvith money *Almeric Papienſis*, which *Edward* had made Captain of *Calais*, to deliver up the City, but the matter being diſcloſed, *Almeric* is called for into *England*, vvho coming, and confeſſing his fault, at laſt he obtained pardon, but upon that condition that he ſhould deceive the *French* of their expectation, and deliver them up to the hands of the *Engliſh*. At the time appointed came *Charnus*, and brought the Gold with him he had promiſed, but he was circum-

circumvented by *Edwards* Forces; yet he ſtoutly defended himſelf, and made work enough for *Edward* and his Sonne both, that were preſent untill all were ſlain that he brought with him, and he (with a Cavalier of *Ribomantium*, who had twice diſmounted *Edward*, but at laſt was vanquiſhed by him) was taken priſoner.

But the buſineſs ſucceeded more happily, for the *Engliſh* got the Caſtle of *Guyan* by bribing the Governour, and ſo plaid the *French* the ſame trick.

Philip the *French* King now dyed, leaving his Sonne *John* Heir of the Kingdom, alſo *Humbert* Prince of *Dauphine* died, who left the ſame ſucceſſour, and from that time the firſt born of the *French* King is called the *Dolphine*.

But when the Treaties of Peace began, ſucceeded not, *Edward* Prince of *Wales* is ſent again into *France*, who over-running *Aquitan*, *Septimania*, *Tolouſe*, *Narbon*, *Bourges*; heavy with the ſpoil came back to *Bourdeaux*. *Edward* no leſs on the other part vexed *France* with new Forces; alſo he ſet *Lancaſter* to aſſiſt the King of *Navarre*, who alſo Conquered many Caſtles and Cities, wherefore the *French* man raiſing what Forces he could, firſt laies hold on *Normandy*, and recovered many Towns there, and had won all the Province, unleſs he had been

been diverted by the insolency of *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, who came against him, but when *Edward* was too weak for the *French* Army, he soon retreated to *Burdeaux*. The *French* followed him, and forced him to fight, not willing to forbear the hopes he had of the Victory, although Legates came from the Pope, and submissively desired Peace. But the Prince of *Wales* scorning the base conditions sent him by the *French* (namely, That he should yeeld himself and his Army to the mercy of the *French*) made himself ready to fight, and making choice of some places that were Vineyards, and over-grown with briars, that he might avoid the violence of the Horse, there he planted his Bow-men, who easily troubled the Horsemen that came improvidently to offend them, and so began the Battell, and following their success, they dispersed and routed all the *French* Army presently; King *John* himself, with his younger Sonne *Philip*, and an innumerable Nobility of *France* were taken prisoners; seven thousand were slain, amongst whom were many chief Noble men. The rest with three Sons of the King escaped by flight. The King of *France* though he were captivated, was used with all respect by Prince *Edward*, and when he had wintred with him at *Bourdeaux*, at the beginning of the spring he is brought into *England*,

land, and is entertained richly by King *Edward*; vvho being content with one Captive King, he releaſed *David* King of *Scotland*, at the requeſt of Queen *Joan*, ſiſter to *Edward*, when he had lived in *England* eleven years, firſt paying his Ranſom that he had promiſed. But by the interceſſion of ſome Cardinals, there was a Treaty of Peace between both Kings. And *John* being now weary of his ſtay in *England*, eaſily yeelded to thoſe conditions which *Edward* propounded. But his eldeſt Sonne the Dolphine Prince, and the Counſel of *France*, vvere not content with them, ſaying they were heavy and unjuſt. Whereupon *Edward* impatient of delayes, attempts to make good by Arms, that he could not obtain in Peace. He leaving the charge of the Kingdom to his younger Sonne *Thomas*, with 1100 Ships, and the Flower of the Nobility of *England*, ſails to *Calais*, vvhere he divided his Army into three parts: The firſt Body he truſted vvith the Prince of *Wales*, the ſecond to *Lancaſter*, the third he kept for himſelf. Then over-running *Picardy*, he wan many Towns, till he ſat down with his Army before the Walls of *Paris*, waiting in vain for the coming of the Dolphin, wherefore he retreated toward *Lions*. But in the vvay he was overtaken with ſo great a tempeſt, in the year 1360, that being mightily frighted,

frighted, he made a vow to make peace with the *French*, and not long after it was confirmed at *Lyons*: In which conditions the *French* King was alſo included with his Sonne, and is releaſed from his Captivity, and great part of *France*, with a vaſt ſumme of Money is granted to *Edward*, but the *French* King the next year, (the cauſe why is not certain) came for *England*, and after he had languiſhed long, he died there.

Edward about this time inſtituted the Order of Knights of the Garter, with great ſolemnity.

The fame of the Prince of *Wales* was now ſpread through the world, wherefore if any were oppreſſed with injury, or wronged by their enemies, they fled to him for to be their Protector, and to revenge their wrongs. Amongſt the reſt, *Peter* King of *Caſtile* was reſtored again to his Kingdom, who returned him very ſmall thanks for his labour, for *Peter* refuſed to pay the Souldiers their wages they deſerved. The Prince got nothing by it, but griefe of minde and body, (if you ſet aſide the fame and glory he acquired of his great vertue.) The Souldiers in the *interim*, being enraged for lack of their pay, that they might not want neceſſary proviſion, over-run the Territories round about, and commit rapine in all

places where they came; whereupon the inhabitants complain to the King of *France*, therefore the *French* King ſets the Prince a day to give an account of this inſolence: He denied to come, unleſſe he came armed with 60000 Souldiers; ſo this controverſie brake forth into open Warre, and they on both ſides take by force many Towns, and abundance of men are ſlain, the *Engliſh* for the moſt part having the beſt of it, conquering the Towns of *Burdeaux* and *Belloparch*, where they took the Mother of the Duke of *Borbon*, and the Queen of *France*.

About this time *Philippa* Queen of *England* died, yet her death put no ſtop to the *Engliſh* proceedings in *France*.

For the Earle of *Pembroke* falling upon the people of *Anion*, wan many Towns, and when he endeavoured to take and ſpoil the *French* Navy, by the induſtry of the Earl of *Sant-Paul*, he was fruſtrated, and ſo he returned for *Callis*, plundering all in the way. In the mean time the men of *Angiers* and *Bourges* waſted the borders of the Prince of *Wales*, which when he endeavoured to oppoſe, receiving news of *Lemoges* taken, making haſte thither, he wan it again, killing all every where, but obſerving the valour of three Centurions, who by their Gallantry checked his conquering ſword, for

their

their ſakes he ſpared the City, and the Lives of all the inhabitants that were left. *David* King of *Scots* died in the mean time, leaving no heir, beſides his Couſin *Robert Stuart*, who ſucceeded him, and was Crowned at *Scone*. *Robert Canolns* was now ſent into *France* with a great Army, behaved himſelf more boldly than fortunately, for he was circumvented by *Bertrand Ceſquinus*, and loſt the greateſt part of his men.

Edward Prince of *Wales*, the moſt famous for his Valour and Chivalry, died at *Burdeaux* about this time, and *Gualter Mani* a valiant Captain, died at *London*. Alſo the Earl of *Pembroke*, who had married his Daughter, being now Governour of *Guyan*, when he was going to his charge of Government, was taken by the *Spaniards* and carried into *Spain*. All thoſe poſſeſſions which the Prince of *Wales* had won, followed, and were recovered again by *Charles* the fifth, King of *France*, ſo that the chance of War now began manifeſtly to alter. *Edward* indeed went thither with mighty Forces, but by a contrary Tempeſt he loſt his labour, and *Lancaſter* was careful of his buſineſs, but did nothing prevail.

Edward when he had loſt, (together with his hopes he conceived of his Sonne *Edward*,) all the fruits almoſt of his travel in *France*, fell

into ſo great grief of minde and body, that he died about ten moneths after the Prince of *Wales*, when he had raigned fifty years. He was the moſt valiant of all the Kings, a comely perſon, excellent for the gifts of his body and minde, living as one may ſay after his death, having had a Wife and a Sonne that were incomparable, and was buried at *Weſtminſter*.

Richard *the Second*, *King of* England *and* France.

Anno 1378.

Richard ſirnamed of *Burdeaux*, the Sonne of *Edward* the Black Prince of *Wales*, appointed to ſucceed by *Edward* his Grandfather, came to the Crown after his death, not yet being paſt eleven years of age. Wherefore he had Governours aſſigned to him, *John* Duke of *Lancaſter*, and *Edmund* Earl of *Cambridge*, his Uncles by his Fathers ſide. The *Scotch* and *French* taking occaſion to win from him by reaſon of his Nonage, provide Armies for invaſion. The *French* conquer the City *Rye*, and being encouraged by their ſucceſs they fall upon the Iſle of *Wight*, and ſpoil all with fire and ſword,

ſword, wreſting from the Inhabitants great ſummes of Money, and ſo ſpoiling all the Frontiers of *England*, they are enriched with a vaſt prey. The *Scotch* take the Caſtle of *Barwick*, but by the Valour of the people of *Northumberland* and *Nottingham* the Fort is recovered, and all the *Scots* killed. Alſo *Hugh Calverly*, Governour of *Callis* burn'd 26 Ships of *France* in the Harbour of *Bononia*, caſting fire amongſt them. So *John Philpot* Citizen of *London*, preparing a Fleet at his own charge, took all the Ships of *Mercerus*, a notable Rover, who plaid the Pirate on the borders of *England*, and robd all the *Engliſh* Merchants Ships. When he returned, inſtead of a reward, he is accuſed of high Treaſon, becauſe he had fitted his Navy without the Kings knowledge, he defended his cauſe ſo well, that he not only excuſed what he did, but is famous for it unto this day. The King ſaid, *That publick actions may be privately traduced, yet they may not be publickly examined, ſince Authority would in ſuch a caſe commit a fault, and in place of an errour raiſe a tumult, and ſince the loſſe is generall and common, every one affords weapons for revenge, and though it were againſt reaſon to exceed the Commiſſion, yet it cannot be held a criminall matter, to engage for it with hazard of ones life.* With good and bad fortune they laboured much

on both ſides. The *Scotch* waſte with fire *Rupisburg*, but the Earl of *Northumberland* entring *Scotland*, ſpoil'd the Territories of *Merchia* with ſword and flame likewiſe. The Northern *Engliſh* attempting to invade *Scotland* alſo are unhappily ſlain. And afterwards the Duke of *Lancaſter*, with *Buckingham*, *Warwick*, *Stafford*, and others, the chief of the Nobility, arrive in *Britain* with a great Fleet, thinking to lay ſiege to S^t. *Malos*, but finding the Garriſon too ſtrong, they return home again. The *Scotch* in the mean while ſetting ſcaling ladders to the Caſtle of *Barwick*, overcame it in the night, and killed *Robert Baynton* Governour of it. But the Earl of *Northumberland* coming ſuddenly with an Army, regain'd the Caſtle after he had beleaguerd it two dayes. *William Montacute* the Kings Embaſſadour at *Calis*, was ſucceſsfull in his buſineſs both by Sea and Land. But *John Clark* was as unfortunate. though he behaved himſelf valiantly, being conquered and taken by the enemy, both he and his Ships. And ſo here and elſewhere they ſtrove with doubtfull fortune.

In the mean while *Thomas Cartonius* is accuſed for Treaſon by *John Anſler*, that he had for money given up to the *French* the Caſtle of S^t. *Saviour*. *Cartonius* denying the fact, is challenged

ged by *Anſter* to fight a Duel with him, wherein *Carton*, though he were farre ſtronger in Limbs and force than *Anſter*, is killed by him; At the beginning of the fourth year of King *Richard*'s Raign, the Earl of *Buckingham* was ſent with others, and a ſmall Army into *France*, to aſſiſt the Duke of *Britain*, but the *French* King dying about that time, Peace was confirmed between the new King and the Duke. But the *Spaniſh* and the *French* Galleys did wonderfully ſpoil the Sea-Towns of *England* at that time, and many Towns were either plunder'd or conſumed by fire, ſo laden with the prey they returned home.

The *Kentiſh* men by reaſon of the deadly burden of Tributes, grew mad, and are enraged with an implacable hatred againſt the Nobility, taking all occaſions they could finde, for the baſeſt dregs of men commonly being uncapable of honour themſelves, which they cannot ſuſtain, are envious againſt thoſe that are. They report that *Wat Tyler* was the Author of it, who killed the Collector of Tribute that behaved himſelf arrogantly with his own ſtaff, that he took from him. To whom other ſeditious fellows, and whole Provinces joyned themſelves. This tumultuary Faction increaſed mightily, came to *London* with his Army, and kills firſt of all *Richard Lyon*, a *London* Doctor with an Ax. And

putting his Head on the top of his Spear, carries it for a Trophie of his valour. Then all of them the next day runne to *Lancaſter*-Hall, and ſet it on fire, they take away the rich Hangings, and throw them into the Thames, carefully looking to it that no man ſhould keep any thing for himſelf, and when one covetous fellow had hid a ſilver Cup in his boſome, they take the man and threw him into the fire alive, with the Cup. Part of them got into the Wine-cellar, who being half oppreſſed with the Houſe falling down, lived ſeven dayes after the great downfall, imploring no ſuccour to help them. After this manner, plundering up and down, they runne madding to every place; At laſt they haſten to the Kings Court, and to the Tower of *London*, and they quickly overcome the Tower, the King not daring to make oppoſition againſt them, where the Queen-Mother, ſuffering an affront by a certain inſolent fellow that offered her a bone, fell down half dead. *Simon* Biſhop of *Canterbury*, being haled out of the Tower, had his Head cut off at Tower-hill by them. *Robert Hallins* endured the ſame death, and ſo did many others; They neither regarded Churches nor publick places, they deſtroy all in their fury like mad men. The King thinking what remedy he ſhould uſe to ſuppreſſe theſe tumults, granting a Pardon for

what

what they had done, endeavours to pacifie the Rabble. The Inhabitants of the County of *Eſſex* are obedient, and return home. But the *Kentiſh* men perſiſt in their ſtubbornneſſe, *Tyler* being their Leader: To whom, in the Kings Name *John Newton* was ſent, that he might by intreaty reduce theſe inſolent people to their Duty, or elſe ſhould enquire what they would have; He coming riding on Horſback, was commanded by *Tyler* to alight, and to deliver his Meſſage on foot (ſo much Authority did he arrogate to himſelf in this fury) the Knight refuſed to come from his Horſe, whereupon *Tyler* comes at him with his Sword: The King loath to have the Knight endanger'd, intreats him to alight, the Knight refuſing it, and *Tyler* urging him, at laſt came *William Walworth* the Major of the City, and with the ſtaff he had in his hand, he gave *Tyler* a grievous wound on the Head, and according to his office bid him ſubmit to the King; whilſt he ſtood reeling with this blow, he was killed by the Kings followers with innumerable wounds. The Captain being ſlain, the maimed faction ſeemed to prepare for to be revenged; But the King, though he were yet under fifteen years of age, paſſed on to them with a ready minde, promiſing that he would be their Commander, and bad them follow him, and all ſhould be as they deſired. In the

the mean while *Walworth* had gathered toget her about a 1000 Citizens, the Captain whereof was *Robert Conolus*, and coming upon them as they were in a Tumult, he put them in such a fright, that they cast away their Arms, and were glad to submit. The Citizens had fallen upon the Rebels, but the King would not suffer them, least they should kill the Innocent with the offendours: That the tumult might be wholly ended, he gave each man leave to return home to his habitation. But elsewhere the same quiet was not procured; For in *Suffolk* they ran madding up and down unmeasurably, and pulled down some Judges houses; and so at *Cambridge*, and in other places, killiug, cutting off the Heads, and otherwayes miserably massacring the Nobility; Their Captain was *John Litteſter* a Diar, who was grown so lofty that he behaved himself like a King. But he with all his followers was suppressed by *Henry Spencer*, Bishop of *Norwich*, an industrious and valiant man, who took him prisoner, and brought him to Execution. At *London* also, and elsewhere they proceeded against the guilty, where *John Straw*, and others are put to death, and so all this Tumult was ended. *Lancaster* in the mean while was sent against the *Scotch*, that he might perpetually observe them, if they should attempt any thing upon the occasion of these dis-

diſorders. But he ſo wiſely managed the matter, that before they had any rumour of his March thitherward, there was a Ceſſation granted for two or three years. In the interim, *Anna* the Siſter of *Wenceſlaus* the Emperour came to *London* to be married to the King, where the Marriage was ſolemnized with a wonderfull pomp.

Henry Spencer about that time had obtained an Army from the King, which he led againſt the *French*, and chiefly for Pope *Urban* againſt *Clement* the Anti-pope; And firſt coming into *Flanders*, he beſieged *Iper*, but by a greater force marching out of *France*, he was conſtrained to raiſe the Siege, and when they came beſide *Graveling*, he writ to the King, that there was now a fit occaſion to defeat the Enemy, but *Lancaſter* who had the command, making delayes, it fell to nothing; ſo *Spencer* having done no buſineſs returns home again, and ſhortly after Truce was made between the *French* and the *Engliſh*.

In the mean while the *Scotch* entring the Borders of *England*, conſumed many Towns and Caſtles with fire and ſword: But *Lancaſter* with *Buckingham* going againſt them, when they could not force the *Scots* to fight, for revenge of the wrong they had done, ſet fire to ſome of their Cities and Villages, and ſo retreat for *England*.

But

But *Richard* to ſuppreſs their Inſolence, to whom alſo the *French* had ſent aid, he with his Army marched into *Scotland*, and finding *Edenburgh* without a Garriſon, he ſet that on fire; The *Scots* to divert the *Engliſh* Forces, fall into *Cumberland*, and lay ſiege to *Carlile*, but hearing of *Richards* approach, they giving warning to their fellows return for *Scotland*.

Lancaſter at that time with a choice number of Souldiers makes a voyage into *Spain*, King *Richard* beſtowing on him the Title of the King of *Spain*, where he did conquer ſome Towns, and married his Daughter to the King of *Portugall*, but the *Engliſh* being impatient of that Countrey, and the heat of the Ayre, fell into all kindes of diſeaſes, and ſo made a Truce, which a Peace followed ſhortly after.

On the Coaſts of *France*, the Earls of *Arundel* and *Nottingham* being the Leaders, an hundred *French* Veſſels laden with wine were overcome, and *Breſt* freed from a Siege. But a grievous Controverſie grew at this time in *England* between the King and the Nobility, the Duke of *Gloceſter*, the Earl of *Arundel* and others; the Duke of *Ireland*, the Earls of *Suffolk*, and many other malicious men ſetting them on. They fell to their Arms, but by the milder counſell

counſell of others they grew friends again. The Duke of *Ireland* leaving the Court of his own accord, fell amongſt the Forces of the Earl of *Darby*, and not daring to fight, ſwimming the River with his Horſe, he landed at *Beauvois*, where like a baniſhed man he lived ſome years at *Lovaine*. And the reſt who were Authors of the Warre againſt the King at a famous ſitting in Parliament, were commanded to forſake the Court and Kingdom, and ſome were put to extream tortures.

In the 15th year of *Richards* Government, the *Londoners* fell to Mutiny, for a very light cauſe, and the King being wonderfully offended at them for a ſmall ſumme of Money they had refuſed him, he puniſhed them with the loſſe of their chiefe priviledges, and with the payment of a great ſumme of money. This is the effect of offending Kings.

After this in a ſolemn meeting of the Kings, Peace was ratified between *England* and *France*, *Iſabella* the Daughter of the *French* King, a Maid of eight years old, being betrothed to King *Richard*. For *Anna* his former Wife was deceaſed. The Duke of *Gloceſter* by an importune word blaming the Kings negligence, fell into his diſpleaſure, and fearing ſome iſſue of it, with his Brothers, forſooke the Court, and entring into a Conſpiracy with ſome friends, he

he attempted to change the ſtate of the Kingdom. But the King under-ſeeling it, with his Brother the Earl of *Huntington*, took a progreſs to the Caſtle of the Duke of *Glocester* his Fathers Brother, when he came there at night he found the Duke riſing out of his Bed, and preſently going to meet him, he was taken by the Earl *Marſhall*, and carried Priſoner to *Callis*, and there was hanged miſerably. Alſo the Earl of *Arundel* the chief Conſpiratour, and ſome principal Noblemen, are caſt into Priſon. And he afterwards in a Parliament being queſtioned for his life, had his head cut off, the reſt being condemned either to be baniſhed, or to perpetual Impriſonment; And thus *Richard* by the bloud of the Nobility thought to make good his Kingdom.

The Dukes of *Norfolk* and *Hereford* without any other witneſs, appeaching one the other of Treaſon, are admitted to fight a Duell, but when they were both ready to fight, they were commanded to forbear, and ſo to ſpare blood, they were both ſent away to divers places into Baniſhment. *Norfolk* went firſt for *Germany*, then to *Venice*, where he died of meer ſorrow and grief. But *Hereford* who had ſail'd into *France*, and there being inſtigated by the Counſel of the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, who was baniſhed for the ſame Conſpiracy, returned privately

privately home, under a pretence of his patrimony to be redeemed (which the King had brought into the Exchequer after his Fathers death, againſt all Right and Equity) but indeed, that joyning with the Nobility he might order the Kings inſolence. He was ſcarce landed, but the Nobility came from all parts to him, and he waxed very ſtrong. And having now a ſufficient Army, he took ſome Cities, and beheaded the Kings chiefeſt Counſellours. *Richard* in the *interim* was in *Ireland*, and did his beſt to ſubdue the *Iriſh*; When a Meſſenger came to him of the Commotions in *England*, he was troubled at it, yet made no haſte, according as the danger required. At length the Earl of *Saliſbury* was ſent into *England* before him, that he might levy what Forces he could, the King promiſing in ſix dayes to be with him. As ſoon as the Earl ſet foot in *England*, he raiſed with eaſe a mighty Army of *Welſh*, but the King not appearing, a rumour was given that he was dead, ſo part of his Forces went one way, ſome another, but a few ſtood to their Colours; the King at laſt, ſo ſoon as contrary windes would let him, came to them. But when he found ſo much of the Countrey to be fallen to *Hereford*, and the Duke of *Lancaſter* alſo by the death of his Father; he quite fainted in his minde, and bad all thoſe men that came to help him

him to go whither they pleaſed, yet they continuing their fidelity, he with the Earl of *Exeter*, and ſome others, fled to the Caſtle of *Conve*, where he found the Earl of *Salisbury*. Here the Duke of *Worceſter*, who was Governour of the Kings Houſe, breaking his white Staff, a ſigne of his Office, and ſo renouncing his fidelity, fell off from the King to the Lords Conſpiratours. Then the Earl of *Northumberland* is ſent to the King, who from that Caſtle conveyed him to another place, ſaying alſo that he came to treat with the King for Conditions of peace: which the King did not refuſe, but in the way the Earl of *Rutland* coming upon him, he is forced to go to *Flint* Caſtle, whither ſhortly after *Henry* the Duke of *Lancaſter* came, who was guilty, and friendly received by the King, and then he related the cauſe of his coming, which was, that he might receive his Rights and goods. The King granted, and ratified all, ſo they went to drink together, and afterwards mounting on Horſback, they ride towards *London* in a continued voyage, in ſo great haſt that the King had no leiſure given him to change his cloaths. Then was the King put into the Tower, the Caſtle for the Nobility, and was diligently watched there. And a Parliament was called by the command of *Lancaſter*, though it were falſly given out in the Kings

Kings Name, wherein *Richard* was accuſed of divers crimes, Namely, *That he had waſted the goods of the Kingdom. That he had borrowed a vaſt ſumme of Money, and not yet repay'd it. That he had made all the Lawes Arbitrary, as he pleaſed. That he had changed the Members of Parliament when he would. That he had Tyrannically taken Power to himſelf over the Subjects Eſtates. That he had corrupted the Judges. That he had cauſed his Uncle Earl of* Gloceſter *to be barbarouſly murdered at* Callis. *That he had impriſoned the Members of Parliament. That beyond Right and Equity he had put the Earl of* Arundel *to extream Torture. That he had depopulated his own Kingdome. That he had pawned the Ornaments of the Kingdome and Kings out of the Kingdome,* and ſo forward. For which faults they thought fit to deprive him of all his Honours and Title of King; But he that he might ſeem to deſire what he would have avoided, willingly reſigned all his Right to the Kingdom, and freely gave it to *Henry* of *Lancaſter* whom he nominated to ſucceed him, which was ratified and confirmed by the Great Seal. Then *Richard* being brought to *Pomfret*-Caſtle, was diſcharged of his Crown.

Henry having thus got the Kingdome, and not enduring any Competitour, one day la-

menting, was heard to cry out, *Is there any man will free me from that hatefull man?* And preſently one *Peter Exton* a Knight, that he might winne the Kings favour with ſuch a wickedneſſe, went with eight more unto *Richard*, whom he ſet upon to kill him, being at Dinner, but *Richard* riſing haſtily, wreſting the Ax out of the hands of one of his Executioners, killed four of them, and at laſt by this *Peter Exton* he was knocked down dead himſelf, by an unhappy blow on the Head, which the Parricides lamented when it was too late.

Thus the unhappieſt and moſt well-favoured of the Kings of *England*, ended his life and Kingdom, being firſt buried at *Langley* in *Hartfordſhire*, and afterward removed to *Weſtminſter*.

HENRY *the Fourth, King of* England *and* France.

Anno 1399.

HENRY of *Lancaſter*, who was nominated to ſucceed, was crowned King, but that he might not be thought to uſurp that Kingdom which he had by Election, he endeavoured to be eſtabliſhed in his own Right, vaunting that he was the next Heir, being directly deſcended from *Henry* the third, but that was falſe and counterfeit, for *Roger Mortimer* Earl of *Marſh*, deriving his Pedigree from the eldeſt Sonne of *Henry* the third, had a better Title. To this he added, his Right of Force, whereby he made good the Succeſſion he could not have done by inheritance; Be it what it will be, he maintain'd it by his Sword. He gave good example when his Right held but weakly, for he made it up by good turns, granting a General Pardon of all the wrongs had been done unto him, but thoſe that were guilty of the death of the Duke of *Gloceſter*, he brought to a ſhamefull end, abhorring ſo great wickedneſſe.

But after that the Fame of *Richard* being depoſed, was divulged in *France*, King *Charls* was purpoſed to revenge his Sonne in Laws wrongs, and to re-eſtabliſh him in the Throne. But when it was certainly underſtood that he was dead, all that buſineſſe came to nothing.

Alſo thoſe of *Aquitan* and other places riſing about the rumour of the death of their Duke, were pacified by Meſſengers ſent to them in time. When he had got the Kingdom by troubles, it could not be but that he muſt hold it with troubles alſo. For *John* Earl of *Exceter*, with *John Montacute*, *Thomas* Earl of *Kent* his Nephew, *Hugh Spencer* and others, conſpired to invite *Henry* to *Oxford*, under pretence of Running a Tilt, thinking to kill him treacherouſly at this exerciſe. But the matter was diſcovered and became void. Then what by fraud they could not do, they attempt to do by open Warre, carrying about with them a certain counterfeit *Richard* (for he was not yet ſlain) and they labour to reſtore him, as one that was miſerably wronged, but their Forces running from them, either by fear of diſtruſt, the Authours of it were taken, and cruelly put to death. The *Welſh* alſo about that time, as their cuſtome was, make new Commotions, but the King came opportunely

tunely with his Army, and eaſily diſperſed them, puniſhing the chief of them. Whilſt theſe things were in motion *George Dumbar* fled into *England* to the Earl of *Northumberland*, craving aſſiſtance againſt *David* the Sonne of the King of *Scotland*; for he had Divorced the Daughter of this *George*, that was betrothed to him, and had married another Wife, not reſtoring the Dowry of the former. Wherefore both of them making a Sally into *Scotland*, fought firſt on equal terms with the Adverſaries, but at laſt they routed them, and came back loaded with great ſpoil.

In the mean while *Thomas* Earl of *Worceſter*, knowing that the King was taken up with the Commotions in *Wales*, joyning to himſelf *Henry* Earl of *Stafford*, his Couſin by his Brothers ſide, with an Army, and the *Scotch* to boot, who naturally hated the *Engliſh*, beyond meaſure, makes Warre againſt the King; But the King, leaſt by delayes the miſchief might encreaſe, leaving *Wales* came in time to oppoſe them. When both Armies were now ready, they fell to it fiercely, and fought long on equal terms, untill ſuch time as the perfidious *Welſh* came to aſſiſt *Thomas*, and began the Battel afreſh; Yet *Henry*, Father and Sonne, gave wonderfull teſtimony

of their invincible Courages, running *Thomas* of *Worceſter* through with a Lance, and killing him. Whereupon they vanquiſhed the Enemy that was now in ſuch fair hopes, and glorying of the Victory. *Henry Piercy* the King took Priſoner, and cauſeth his head to be cut off, *Anno* 1402.

Alſo the Earl of *Northumberland*, who was one of the partakers, to ſave his Life, fled to *George* of *Dumbar* Earl of *Marſh*, who was now reſtored to his Eſtate in *Scotland*. After this Conqueſt Prince *Henry* makes an inroade againſt the perfidious *Welſh*, and eaſily put an end to a mutinous Warre, ſubduing the Rebels, baniſhing *Owen* the Ring-leader, a very valiant man, but ſeditious, who was ſo brought to great want, and ended his life miſerably.

In the mean while the *French* came to help the Rebel *Welſh* with thirty Ships, their Leader was *James Borbon* Earl of *Marſh*, they ſet Sail, but by a Tempeſt were brought upon ſome other Coaſt of *England*, and they got into *Cornwall*, upon which occaſion they poſſeſſed themſelves of *Plymmouth* Haven, and comming on Land, they ruine all places they meet with fire and Sword; But ſtormes ſuddenly ariſing, twelve of their Ships were drowned, ſo they began to think how to return back, and haſtily

haſtily giving warning to the reſt, laden with their prey they came again to *France*. But *Thomas* the Sonne of King *Henry*, with his Navy brought together, depopulated the Frontiers of *France*, and taking many Merchantmen, ſufficiently requited this Injury. But the Kings of *France* and *England*, being full of troubles at home, and ſo thinking leſſe of revenge, made a Truce for ſome moneths. The King untill that time being a Batchelour, took to Wife *Joan* that was formerly married to Duke *Montfort*, and eſpouſed her Daughter *Blanch* to the Sonne of the Duke of *Bavaria*.

At that time *William Plunton*, a valiant warlike Knight, conſpired againſt the King, with the Friends of *Mowbray*, who (as we ſaid) lived baniſhed at *Venice*. To theſe the men of *Northumberland*, and laſtly the *Scotch* united themſelves. The King being certain of this matter, comes preſently with an Army, and eaſily defeated them: *Plunton* and ſome of his Followers, with *Richard Scroop* Archbiſhop of *York*, who was ſaid to have had a finger in this Rebellion, was taken priſoner. *Plunton* by the generall vote loſt his Head for his inſolence, and afterwards the reſt were put to death, being convicted of this wickedneſs.

The King to extinguiſh Rebellion quite, ſent his Sonne *Henry* Prince of *Wales* againſt the *Scots*, who were coming on to aſſiſt *Plunton*, but they, when they had heard that the Conſpiracy was detected, and the Authours of it executed, were not come from their places. But *Henry* that he might not loſe his labour, enters *Scotland*, and waſts it miſerably with fire and Sword, and ſtruck a wonderfull terrour upon the *Scots*, ſo loading himſelf with the ſpoile and booty, he returns back to his Father to *London*, who was vexed to the purpoſe with new Commotions dayly riſing one out of another, upon every occaſion. And now again ſome body had raiſ'd a Rumour amongſt the People, that *Richard* was yet alive, whereupon the common people that alwayes gape after novelties, being moved, had made dangerous troubles, if their faction had not been wiſely and timely ſuppreſſed. Alſo the Earl of *Northumberland* making a Covenant with *George* Earl of *Marſh*, and raiſing ſome thouſands of *Scotch* and *Engliſh*, he entered the Borders of *England*, and preys in an hoſtile manner on the Territories of *Yorkſhire*; The King went againſt them, and overthrew all their Forces, routing them in a tumultuary battell. Some of the principall who fell into the Kings power were brought to *York* and executed there.

In

In the mean while *Edmund* Earl of *Kent*, to ſuppreſs the *French* Pyrats was ſent to Sea with a gallant Navy, but not lighting upon the Pirates, being hot with deſire to fight, he ſought for them in the very Haven, at the Temple of *Brioc*; and when he could not fight at Sea, he entred the City by Land, but the Earl himſelf was killed by an unhappy blow with a ſtone; yet his Souldiers took the Town, rifled it and burnt it, and killing moſt of the Inhabitants they returned again for *England*. Alſo the *Engliſh* at the ſame time, the Earl of *Arundel* being in chief, did do their buſineſſe proſperouſly for the Duke of *Burgundy*, and being highly rewarded, they went backe for their Country, the Warre being as then not ended between the *Burgundian* and the Duke of *Orleans*. But he, knowing that the hearts of the *Engliſh* were therefore ſet againſt him, requeſting their aſſiſtance, obtained it from King *Henry*, but when there was a ſcattered report that they were both agreed, the auxiliary *Engliſh* ſtaying by the *Loyre*, expected their wages, which when they could not obtaine, they being incenſed, plundered a Town that was hard by, called *Bellilocum*, and the Monaſtery; and after that being called away by the Duke of *Clarence*, they march toward *Gaſconye* for the Duke of *Orleans*, and plunder all

as

as they go along, and when the Duke of *Orleans* had paid them their wages, they were pacified, and returned for *England*.

But *Henry* now for a good while having ended his Civil Warre, and intending an expedition for *Paleſtina*, preparing a Fleet for that purpoſe, died very ſuddenly at *Weſtminſter*, when he had reigned about 14 years. About the time of his death, *James Stuart*, the eldeſt Sonne of *Robert* (for *David* was dead) whileſt he was taking a voyage into *France*, was taken by the *Engliſh*, and was brought to *London*, being exceedingly entertained by the King, but his Father ſuppoſing his Sonne was now loſt, died for meer grief and ſorrow ſhortly after; whom his Brother ſucceeded in the Throne.

Henry *the Fifth, King of* England *and* France.

Anno 1413.

THis King was inaugurated with a wonderfull applauſe and deſire of the Lords and Commons; and he not willing to diſappoint his Subjects of the hope they conceived of him, gave

gave presently a sign of his excellent Government, sending away from him those Ministers of lascivious youth, amongst whom he had been formerly bred; and least by sluggishnesse his valiant heart should languish, he sets his whole care how to recover his right in *France*, having narrowly looked into it. First, he sent Heraulds, and demanded his Kingdome from King *Charles*, promising to Marry his Daughter, and threatning also, that if *Charles* would not do it, he would come with an Army and take his Patrimony by force. *Charles* laughed at his Embassadours, whereby he so enraged the minde of *Henry*, that he presently mustering a mighty Army, with about 120 Ships, he sails into *France*; First, he besieged *Harflet*, and in a few dayes compelled it to yeild: Then passing to *Semma*, at the Temple of *Maxentius*, the enemy met him, wherefore he pitched his Tents: But when he saw the enemy not very greedy to fight, he skirmished lightly, and so passed on to *Callis*. The *French* man in the meane time, when it came into his minde, sent Heraulds to *Henry* to challenge him to fight, who was not unwilling to accept it, he dismissed them with rewards, and passing over a River, presently news came that the enemy was at hand, wherefore he hastily makes himselfe ready for the Battell, though he were farre infe-

inferiour, in forces; they presently fall on, but *Henry* joyning industry to his vertue, giving such a violent charge, that after a terrible fight on both sides, he put the *French* at last to their heels. He himself being in the midst of the enemies Forces dismounted the Duke of *Alenson*, who was presently slain by the *English* Souldiers; they had so many prisoners that they farre exceeded the Conquerours, wherefore he commanded to kill them all, least they should rise against them that had subdued them. There was a wonderfull multitude of Dukes, Earls and Lords that were destroyed, and not above 600 of the *English* was wanting, amongst which, one was the Duke of *York*. This Battell was fought at *Dagincourt*, which gave a good *omen* to great Victories afterwards. *Henry* by this Victory cast such a terrour on the *French*, that *Lewis* the *Dolphin*, taking grief of minde died shortly after. Such was the constancy of *Henryes* heart, that he forbad his Souldiers on paine of death to sing any scurrilous songs in derogation of the *French*, but rather to sing Psalmes and Hymnes to the glory of God.

In that time *Sigismund* the Emperour came to *England*, to treat of Peace between the *French* and the *English*, nor was *Henry* slow in the businesse; but when the *French* in the

interim

interim beſieged *Harflet*, he was ſo angry, that no man afterwards durſt mention Peace, and preſently ſending the Duke of *Bedford* to raiſe the ſiege, with the Earl of *Marſh*, *Oxford*, and other Earls, and 200 Ships, he fought a bloody Battell at Sea at *Harflet* Haven, with *Borbon* the *French* Admiral, wherein the *Engliſh* wan the day, ſinking 500 Ships of the *French*, and ſo freed the Town. But *Caſar* finding the perfidiouſneſs of the *French*, did not only forbear ever after to make mention of any Peace, but made a firme League with the *Engliſh* againſt all oppoſers, and ſo returned back into *Germany*. The *French* in the mean time, not to be idle, hired ſome great Ships of *Genoa*, and beſieging the Haven of *Harflet*, endeavoured to hinder all relief from the Town. But the Earl of *Huntington* coming ſuddenly upon them, after a fierce fight diſperſed them, and vanquiſhed the reſt. He took the Duke of *Borbon* a Baſtard, and ſo returned Conquerour for *England*. Then the King with his chief Nobility ſailed into *Normandy*, and Conquered the Fort *Tucha*, whilſt the Earl of *Salisbury* wan *Albervill*, which place the King gave freely to him and his heirs. After that he wan *Caen*, which City when the Townſmen defended with great obſtinacy, he made Mines ſecretly, through which the moſt forward of the ſouldiery entred

the

the City, the Duke of *Clarence* leading them on, and ſetting on the Guard, put them all to flight, and ſo the whole Army found entrance, ſome of the principal for their perverſhefs were put to death, and the plunder of the City was given to the Souldiers. The Governour had not yet yeelded the Fort, but when the King ſware he would ſpare none if they continued reſolute, at laſt he gave it up. The *French* in the mean while being in Civil broils, all things went with the *Engliſh* as they pleaſed. He ſent the Duke of *Clarence* to beſiege the Town of *Bayon*, which he quickly wan, whilſt he ſtaid at *Caen*, he reſtored to the people of *Lyons* a mighty maſs of Treaſure, that was found in the Caſtle, which the frighted people had brought thither, upon condition that they ſhould be conſtant in their obedience for the future: This was a patern of his wonderfull piety. Then he removed to *Corſeu*, and in three dayes won the Town. Then he ſubdued *Argentaniam*, after that *Alencon*, then *Faleſia*, and ſo returned Victor to *Caen*. He had almoſt the like ſucceſs at Sea, vanquiſhing many Ships of the enemy; but his own Fleet was toſſed long in a tempeſt whilſt he ſtrove to ſail to *Southampton*, yet he loſt but two Ships. In the mean while the Earl of *Warwick* and *Talbot* conquer the Caſtle of *Dumfriſe*, and *Clarentius* maſtered

maſtered *Curton*, and many other Towns. Then the King layes ſiege to *Roan*, and at laſt by famine he forced the obſtinate Citizens to ſubmit, which Town being the chief was an example for the reſt to follow, ſo that ſhortly he wan all *Normandy*, which was loſt by the careleſneſs of his predeceſſors. The Duke of *Burgundy* finding all the *Engliſh* deſired to ſucceed, thought it concerned him to procure peace between both Kings, and at laſt he obtained a meeting between *Henry* and the *French* Queen, (for the King was fallen into his uſuall doting) yet there was nothing enacted. The Queen had brought her moſt beautifull Daughter *Katharine*, that ſhe might enſnare the Kings minde with her allurements, nor was it in vain, for *Henry* when he ſaw her was wonderfully taken with her; and when they departed doing nothing, the King laid a charge on the Duke of *Burgundy*, that unleſs all he asked, together with the Kings Daughter, were granted him, he would by force take from the Duke his Dukedom, and from the King his Kingdom. They were ſo frighted with theſe threats, that they fell to a new Parly. But the Dolphin, by reaſon of this newly conceived hatred, and burning with former envy, commanded the Duke of *Burgundy* to be killed baſely, not long after,, though he begged his life from him on his

his knees, and ſo the ſlaughter of the Duke of *Orleance*, committed before by *Burgundy* was expiated. Nor is peace yet concluded, until the *French* were forced to it by a further loſs. A meeting was appointed at *Trecas*, and there was *Katherine* betrothed to *Henry*, and the right of ſucceſſion was confirmed to him after the death of *Charles*; whereupon all the Nobility of *France* ſwear to be Loyall to him, and ſo the Salique Law in *France* was broken. The *Dolphin* who had not conſented to theſe Conditions, is made Warre againſt by the Kings of *France* and *England*, and divers Towns that took part with him are conquered, and when as he came not upon his citation to appear at *Paris* before the Marble Table (as they call it) upon the day appointed, he was baniſhed. *Henry* alſo uſing his Authority, commanded Money to be coyned with the Arms of *France* and *England*, which he called the *Soveraign*. Then leaving the Duke of *Clarence* Governour of *France* and *Normandy*, he returned for *England*. But *Clarence* making an expedition againſt *Aniou*, and ſpoyling them, as he came back laden with the prey, he was betrayed in his paſſage by one *Andrew Fogoſus*, and though he fought valiantly, yet was he ſlain by the Duke of *Alenſon*, with the chief Nobility, and 2000 *Engliſh* men. The Earls of *Sommerſet* and

and of *Suffolk*, and other Lords were taken priſoners. The King to revenge his Brothers death, lands in *France* with a mighty Army, and freed *Chartres* from a ſiege of the Dolphin, for when he heard of the Kings approach, he retreated to *Towrs*, whilſt the *Scotch* King with the Duke of *Gloceſter* conquer *Drocas*. *Henry* purſues the Dolphin from place to place, yet could not overtake him, though he took all Towns in his way, ſo that he joyned in a ſhort time all the Iſland of *France* to the reſt.

In the *interim* the Queen was delivered of a Sonne at *Windſor*, who was Chriſtned *Henry*, of whom King *Henry* ſpake as a Prophet, *Good God*, ſaith he, *I* Henry *of* Monmouth *ſhall have but a ſhort Reign, and ſhall prevail much, but* Henry *of* Windſor *ſhall Reign long, and ſhall loſe all, but the will of GOD be done.*

About that time the Dolphin had beſieged thoſe of *Narbon*, *Henry* marches quickly thither to free them, and making too much haſte, he took a Feaver by over-heating himſelf, wherefore he was forced to ſtay, but the Duke of *Bedford* was diſpatcht, who not only freed them of *Narbon*, but alſo drove the Dolphin towards *Aquitan*, who from thence in mockery was called King of *Aquitan*. But a flux of the

belly coming upon *Henries* diſeaſe, which increaſed every day, he was carried to *Boy de Vincenneis*, where within a few dayes he died Chriſtianly, *Anno* 1421. and buried at *Weſtminſter*. Firſt giving to his Brother the Duke of *Bedford* the Title of Regent of *Normandy* and *France*, and his other Brother the Duke of *Gloceſter* he made Governour of *England*. He was not yet over 36 years old, and ſo he died in the top and flower of his age and honour, having reigned nine years and five moneths: The moſt famous Conquerour of all the Kings, and beſt beloved of his Subjects, that he was ſo lamented of them, which is not uſual, that they could not forbear to weep for him. The Doctrine of *Witcliff* was eminent in this Kings reign, for which *John Huſs* and *Hierom* of *Prague*, were at *Cæſars* command afterwards burnt alive.

HENRY *the Sixth, King of* England *and* France.

Anno 142[illegible].

HENRY of *Windſor*, the ſole Heir of *Henry* the fifth, obtained the Kingdom after his Fathers death, being nine moneths old, who when he came to years, was not like to his Father, either for Vertue or Fortune. He was proclaimed King at *Paris*, by the Authority of the Duke of *Bedford*, all the Lords of the Kingdom ſwearing fidelity to him. But King *Charles* the ſixth dying a little after *Henry*, his Sonne *Charles* the ſeventh hoped to regain by Valour and Induſtry, what the *French* had loſt by cowardiſe. Firſt, he wan the *Pont Malanus*, which City by *Montacute* his vertue was again won from him. Then they fought with a doubtfull ſucceſs at *Crepan*, where about 2000 *French* were ſlain, amongſt whom were many Nobles, and the Town was taken. But *Charles* overcame many of the *Engliſh*, driving a great Herd of Cattell toward *Normandy*, and took the prey from them, and freed the Temple of S^t. *Michel* from a ſiege. Then the chance of

Warre being altered, he is again put to the worſt at *Vernole*. But the fidelity of the men of *Orleans* was notable, who levelling their Suburbs with the ground, held play with the Earl of *Salisbury*, a moſt valiant Commander, who had beleaguerd them, and when they were almoſt famiſhed, and were ready to yeild themſelves to the Duke of *Burgundy*, *Salisbury* diſdaining the honour ſhould be taken from him, refuſed the Conditions, but he whilſt he was not wary enough in viewing the ſcituation of the City, was ſlain with a Bullet from the Walls.

In the *interim* the Duke of *Gloceſter*, did not a little ſtain his Honour, marrying *Jacoba* the Counteſs of *Holland*, which formerly had been married to *John* Duke of *Brabant*; but ſhe being ſurprized by craft, was brought back to her Husband, but again diſguiſing her ſelf in mans apparell, ſhe eſcaped into *Holland*, and there ſhe waged Warre againſt her Husband, and when ſhe was too weak for him, and the Pope would not grant her a Divorce, the Duke of *Gloceſter* rejected her, and ſhe afterwards married to *Francus Borſely*, a Dutch Knight, but he being caſt into priſon by the Duke of *Burgundy*, ſhe afterwards led a miſerable life.

In the mean time the *Engliſh* were often fortunate in Battell againſt the *French*, and recove-

red

red divers Towns; but thoſe of *Orleans* having help as it were from God brought to them, did not a little ſtrengthen the *French* proceedings; for *Joan* a Countrey Maid, which had ſpent her youth in keeping Sheepe, deſiring to free the Kingdom of their enemies the *Engliſh*, was brought to the King, who admired the Maids courage, when he ſaw that ſhe was a Maid indeed: Shee putting on mens Armour, brought proviſion into *Orleans* with the Forces ſhe had received from the King, and with many aſſaults at length ſhe raiſed the Siege. Then ſhe wonderfully weakned the *Engliſh* with many, though leſſe Battels; three thouſand *Engliſh* were ſlain in *Belſia*: Nor was *Charles* wanting to his own affairs, but the Maid being Leader he went to *Rhemes*, and recovered the Enſigns of the Kingdom. Then he marched to *Paris*, whileſt *Bedford* was careſull enough, and ſuffered no occaſion to ſlip to manage his buſineſſe as he ought. The Maid at the ſiege of *Compienna*, thinking to relieve the place, received a wound in the leg, and ſo was fain to retreat. Yet this Warlike Maid broke into the City, and ſallying forth again upon the Enemy, ſhe was taken priſoner, and being convicted (as they report) of Art Magick, ſhe was burnt alive. Yet *Compienna*, was freed from the ſiege, and *Melun*, *Corvolium*, and other places were recovered.

But the *Engliſh* to gain honour to their ſide, calling King *Henry* to *Paris*, now but twelve years old, they Crown him King of *France*, the Lords of that Kingdom who were preſent, ſwearing fealty unto him. In the mean while *Charles* by the craft of a certain Carter, giving fiſh to the watch, recovers *Lyons*, and ſo he followed the ſucceſſe he had. But the Kingdom all this time was wonderfully ruinated, there was nothing left in the field, and a miſerable lamentation was made every where. At laſt both the Leaders of the Warre having their fill, began to Treat of Agreement, at *Artoys* they meet, the *Engliſh* being baited with the ſweetneſſe of the Kingdom of *France*, could not be pacified, but *Burgundy*, *Matiſcan*, the *Temple* of *Gengon*, *Altiſſidore*, and other Towns being yeelded to him, they were content. Then the *Engliſh* took high indignation, deeply reſenting that the Duke of *Burgundy*, their faithfull companion in the Warre was fallen away from them. Their anger thus incenſed would have been the ruine of the *French*, but being laid down it was their ſafety, for in a ſhort time they ſhook off that heavy yoke: For the *Pariſian*, ſuddenly took courage and drove out the *Engliſh* from *Paris*; and on the other ſide, *Burgundy* with the ſame earneſtneſſe he helped the *Engliſh* before, now aſſiſts the *French*. To this

this there hapned the death of the Duke of *Bedford* the Governour of *France*, which did a little damnifie the *Engliſh*: Then other places taking example by *Paris*, fell off to *Charles*, and the *Normans* ſcarce continued their fidelity, but by the ſlaughter of five thouſand of them, they were either frighted or pacified. The *Engliſh* affairs thus declining in *France*, they did not aſſault Cities and fenced places as formerly, but Caſtles and poor Forts. Alſo *Burgundy* waged offenſive Warre with the Duke of *York* who ſucceeded *Bedford*, and beſieged *Callis*, but he retreated in time, for the Duke of *Gloceſter* arrived the next day with a great Army, who finding the enemy gone, ruined all with fire and ſword. In the *interim* the *Scotch* laid ſiege to the Caſtle of *Rapesburg*, but being certified of the return of the Duke of *York*, and the coming of the Earl of *Northumberland*, he quickly raiſed his ſiege.

In the mean while *Harflet* was delivered up to the *French* at a price, the Garriſon ſouldiers being corrupted with money. But the Duke of *Sommerſet* and *Talbot*, beſieging the City afreſh by Sea and Land, regained it once more, the Duke of *Orleans* with his Army being come onely to look on. In the mean time *James* King of *Scotland*, after he had been priſoner ten years in *England*, was reſtored to his liberty, and

placed with a rich Matron, but being at length ingratefull, he was treacherouſly ſlain in his chamber; the authours of the fact were ſeverally executed. All this while the buſineſs went diverſly in *France* on both ſides; and what by Valour, what by Policy, many Towns were won and recovered again. In *England* a conteſt fell out between the Duke of *Gloceſter* and a Cardinal his Uncle, the Wife of the Duke of *Gloceſter* was accuſed by the Cardinal for Witchcraft, as if by Magick Arts ſhe went about to take away the Kings life: She was forced publickly to ſatisfie for that wickedneſs ſhe had not attempted, though others that were guilty in their very ſufferings excuſed the Dutcheſs of it. Now by the interceſſion of Chriſtian Princes they began to treat of Peace between the *French* and the *Engliſh*; Peace was not ratified, but a ceſſation was granted for eighteen moneths. In the mean time the Earl of *Suffolk*, by his own Authority contracted a Marriage between King *Henry*, and *Margaret* the Daughter of the Duke of *Angiers*, boaſting much of the Maids Beauty and Dowry; at laſt he perſwaded the King, though he had paſſed his word to the Daughter of the Earl of *Britain*. This Matrimony Contracted gave but ſmall help to the *Engliſh* affairs, when for commutation great part of *Normandy* was yeilded to the *French*:

Alſo

Alſo the Duke of *Britain* revenging the wrong done to his Daughter, drove all the *Engliſh* out of *Aquitan.*

Now the hatred that had long grown between the Duke of *Summerſet* and *York*, began to bud again. He by fraud and injuſtice depoſed this *York*, from his Authority of Viceroy, though he had behaved himſelf gallantly in *France*, and made himſelf Viceroy in his place; *York* being not a little offended at it. For the King did nothing leſſe, than taking care of his Kingdom, all the Authority was between Queen *Margaret* and the Marqueſſe of *Suffolk.* Alſo by the contriving of his adverſaries, the Duke of *Gloceſter*, who was ſo well eſteemed of by all the people, that they pointed at him by the name of the good Duke, was put out of his place, and unknown to the King, a Parliament being called privately, they queſtion him for his life, he was caſt into priſon, where the next day (how, it is not knowne) he was miſerably murdered.

By a ſtratagem the City of *Fulger* was taken by the *Engliſh*, and the Town *Larcha* by the *French*, ſo they brake out into Warre again. The *French* deſpiſing *Sommerſet* for his negligence, who (as we ſaid) had now all the power, wan many Towns, and in *Guyan* divers willingly fell off to the *French*, amongſt which

was

was *Roan*, following the example of the reſt, and more miſchief befell the *Engliſh*. Alſo the Cities of *Harflet* and *Caer*, though they were valiantly defended, yet by the careleſneſſe of *Sommerſet* the Governour, were delivered up to the *French*, who almoſt, with no pains wan all *Normandy*, and made good all *France*, for themſelves, except *Callis*. The Duke of *York* who ſhould now help the *Engliſh* in *France*, was fain to go to ſtill the *Iriſh* that were up, he quickly pacified them, whereby he wan the peoples hearts very much, and much augmented his own affairs.

But when all things went not as they ſhould do in *France*, and *Sommerſet* was held to be the cauſe of all, and after him *Suffolk*. Many complaints by conſent of the Lower-Houſe of Parliament were alleadged againſt him, whereof he was found guilty, and caſt into Priſon, but he is ſuddenly ſet at liberty: But a new ſitting being ſummoned at the inſtance of the Lower-Houſe he vvas baniſhed for five years, but vvhilſt he ſailed into *France*, he was intercepted by the *Engliſh*, and his Head cut off, leaving his Body diſgracefully on the ſhoar, and ſo the death of the Duke of *Gloceſter* was paid for. *Richard* Duke of *York* in the mean time having won the *Iriſh* hearts, gave the firſt ſtep to end the differences between the White Roſe and the Red,

and

and for a beginning of his own Right to the Crown, for he deſcended from *Lyonel* Duke of *Clarence*, the third Son to the third *Edward*. Nor vvas it difficult to change the ſtate of the Kingdom, when ſo many abuſes and errours that were ſo well known to the common people, were crept in. And King *Henry* vvholly unfit for the Government, as the people would ſay, by vvhoſe fooliſh negligence, *France* and *Normandy* were loſt. The men of *Kent* by the perſvvaſion of *Yorke*, gave their Votes to *John Mortimer*, and with a great and well-appointed Army they march toward *London*, *Mortimer* himſelf commanding them. The Army made a ſtay between *Eltham* and *Greenwich*, and then they ſent up their Complaints to the King and Parliament, concerning the preſent ſtate of the Kingdom, and amongſt the reſt they petition, That the Dukes of *York*, *Buckingham*, and *Exceter*, may be reſtored to their places, and former favour, there was no anſwer given, but a crying out to their Arms. But the men of *Kent*, vvhen they were come to the Battell, killing both the *Staffords*, who commanded the Army, they put the Kings Forces to flight, whereupon the greateſt part of the Kings men fell off, for they came running by companies to *Mortimer*, vvhoſe Forces thus increaſed wonderfully; vvherefore the King fled to *Killing-*

worth

worth Caſtle in the County of *Warwick*, expecting the iſſue. By his departure *Mortimer* grew more bold, and came to the Suburbs of *London*, and then poſſeſſing himſelfe of the Bridge, he came into *London*, doing no wrong to any man, for his Army was very well diſciplined, to keep down the violence of the Souldiers, whereby he won the affections of many, but afterwards the Men of *Kent*, being ſharpned with hope of the prey, fell upon ſome of the richer Citizens, which was very ill reſented by all. *Mortimer* was now Maſter of *London*, and he cut off the Heads of ſome of thoſe that were the Miniſters of thoſe Errours, as *John Say*, Chief-Treaſurer of *England*, and his Son in Laws, and ſome others. But the *Londoners* deteſting his haughtineſſe, arm themſelves, and craving help from *Scales* the Lord Lievtenant of the Tower, with ſuch Forces as they had collected, *Mathew Gogthus* being their Captain, in the night they fall upon *Mortimers* Army, that were in the Suburbs of St. *Georges* on the other ſide of the Thames; But the *Kentiſh* men repulſe them with ſuch violence that the *Londoners* were forced to give ground, and to leave the Bridge to the Conquerours; who hereupon being inraged, fell to caſt in fire to burne the Houſes upon the Bridge, and ſo put a great fright upon the City, and made a great ſlaughter.

ter. At laſt their heat began to remit, and theſe men of *Kent* began to deteſt the wickedneſſe *Mortimer* had done, and deſired to return home again, vvhich when the King underſtood, he ſent his Seal for their Pardon, and for all his men being gone from him. *Mortimer* was left vvithout a Guard, who thinking to eſcape by flight, vvas taken and ſlain.

This tumult was appeaſed, but a farre greater aroſe ſhortly after, for *York* depending upon his Right comes to *London*, under pretence of Complaints againſt his Adverſaries, and eſpecially againſt *Sommerſet* (vvho had loſt *France*, and vvas now come home) but the truth was to make a Party, he obtained the help of *Norfolk*, and the Earls of *Sarisbury* and *Devonſhire* to aſſiſt him, and ſo marching into *Wales*, he quickly raiſed an Army. This King hearing this, prepares his Forces alſo, and collecting Forces he made haſte thither with the Duke of *Sommerſet*; Both the Armies meet at laſt, and the King ſending Meſſengers, asked *York*, What ſhould be the cauſe of ſo great a Tumult? Who caſt all the fault on the Kings evill Counſellours, and chiefly upon *Sommerſet*, promiſing that if he were caſt into Priſon, until ſuch time as he might be tried, that then he would disband all his Army.

Hereupon *Sommerſet* is caſt into Priſon under a co-

a colour, and *York* gave his Paſſe-port, which being done, the King went toward *London* vvith *York*: But *Sommerſet* who before was caſt into priſon, being now ſet at liberty, accompanied the King, and in his ſtead *York* was brought like a Priſoner before the King. At laſt they come to *London*, and there grew a hot diſpute between theſe two Dukes, before the Kings Councel, the one accuſing the other of Treaſon, the matter came at laſt to this head, That *York* ſhould take a ſolemn Oath to be true to the King, and ſhould go toward his Caſtle *Wigmore*, for the report was that *Edward* Earl of *Marſh*, Sonne and Heir to *York*, vvas now drawing up with an Army. And in the mean time a Meſſenger came from *Burdeaux*, craving help againſt the *French*. *John Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury* is ſent thither, vvho after he had behaved himſelf gallantly, was ſlain with a Gun. The *French* by his death recover all they had loſt except *Burdeaux*.

In the mean vvhile the Duke of *York* did his beſt to allure the mindes of the Subjects, and then gaining the Nobility to his ſide, vvho were all offended with *Sommerſet*, and joyning the Earls of *Sarisbury* and *Warwick* with him, he prevailed ſo farre that *Sommerſet* in the Kings abſence was ſent to the Tower. But *Henry* when he heard that, though he vvere ſick, and return-

ing

ing to *London*, he not only ſets him at Liberty, he makes him Governour of *Callis*, and of all the other places in *France*, vvhich thing ſo provoked *York*, that he and his Aſſiſtants March to *London* vvith a great Army. The King with *Sommerſet*, *Buckingham*, and his Sonne *Humphrey*, the Earl of *Northumberland*, and a ſufficient Army goes againſt them. At St. *Albans* the Armies came in ſight one of the other. *York* ſent Letters in the Morning to the King, requiring *Sommerſet* to be delivered up to him, that he might be tried, the King refuſing this, he makes the firſt On-ſet, *Sommerſet*, and vvith him the Earl of *Northumberland* and *Humphrey* Earl of *Stafford* fell in the Battel, and five thouſand men with them. Many were vvounded and taken: The King himſelf, vvho had fled into a Countrey-mans houſe for fear of the weapons, was taken by the Conſpiratours; This Battel fell on *May* the 23th, and the 13th year of his Raign. But *York*, when his Adverſary was dead, commands his Followers to abſtain from fighting, and goes with the King to *London*. Then a Parliament was called, and he is freed from all fault, and made Protector of the King and Kingdome. The Earl of *Sarisbury* vvas made Chancellour, and *Warwick* Governour of *Callis*. For procuring which places every one was very watchfull. But the Queen not endu-

enduring the Authority of *York*, ſhe never left urging *Buckingham* with the Death of his Sonne, and young *Sommerſet* with the Death of his Father; and when ſhe had ſufficiently incenſed them, ſhe goes to *Greenwich*, and there ſhe holds a Councel, commanding *York* and his Confederates to renounce their places; But they refuſed to do it. Then vvith ſubtilty mingled vvith flattery ſhe intercepts them, and did all the miſchief ſhe could, but all in vain, yet they, leaſt they might give cauſe of greater troubles, retire themſelves, ſome to one place, ſome to another. But ſending Meſſengers one to another, they came all to *London* with their Forces provided, and by the Mediation of the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and others, there was an Act of Oblivion granted for all that had been done, and Peace vvas concluded on both ſides, and all is confirmed with a ſolemn Shew of Religion; Yet they held not long, for occaſion being taken from a quarrel that happened between one of the Kings, and of the Earl of *Warwicks* Servants, they endeavoured to lay hold on *Warwick*, but he fore-ſeeing the danger, with Poſthorſe, makes haſte to *York* to the Duke, and to his Father Earl of *Sarisbury*, vvhom he acquainted with the buſineſs, but he going on board the Navy that vvas ready by the ſhoar (for he was Admiral of the Sea) made haſte to *Callis*.

In

In the mean time *Sarisbury* goes to the King with 5000 Souldiers, that he might acquaint him with the injury done to his Sonne, and of the inveterate hatred of the Queen, vvhich was now apparent. But *Audley*, vvho at the command of the Queen, and of the Duke of *Buckingham*, had raiſed an Army of 10000 men, went againſt him, and was beaten, 2400 were ſlain, the reſt fled to ſave themſelves.

York ſuppoſing it was in vain to dally any longer, raiſing an Army, with the Earls of *Sarisbury* and of *Warwicke*, he provides for Warre, but a Treaty being had between both ſides, and a pardon granted by the King for all faults, many forſook the Dukes, and all the Counſels of the Conſpiratours were detected, with which *York* vvas brought to deſperation, and fled vvith his younger Sonne Earl of *Rutland* firſt into *Wales*, then into *Ireland*. When the private Souldiers had procured pardon, the Earls of *Marſh*, *Sarisbury*, and *Warwick* took their voyage for *Callis*, but ſome of the principall were put to death, and a Parliament being called, they were all convinced and condemned for Treaſon. Alſo *Sommerſet* at the Queens interceſſion was made Governour of *Callis*, but when he thought to enter upon his Government, he was ſhot at from the Town, and was forced to betake himſelfe to ſome other place.

The Queen hearing this began to rage, and commanded all the Ships that were in *Sandwich* Haven to be fitted for *Callis*: But *John Dynham* for the Earl of *Marsh* his sake, took them all, and with *Riverius* their Admirall brought them to *Callis*.

The Earl of *Warwick* also sailed into *Ireland* to *York*, and consulting with him, returned safe for *Callis*. *Simon Montfort* was Warden of the Cinque-ports, and guarded all the Inrodes that *Warwick* might not come into *England*, but he being admonished of it by the Spies he had, fastning upon his Navy not yet ready, he plundered *Sandwich*, and brought *Simon* with a great booty to *Callis*. And when he understood that the *Kentish* men desired his presence, he came the second time to *Sandwich*, vvhere the Lord *Cobham* with a great multitude of the Nobility joyned with him; Wherefore being appointed with a[illegible]rmy of 25000 Men, he marched presently [illegible]*London*, and possessed himselfe of the Tower, whereby he afterwards did the *Londoners* a great deal of mischief. But hearing that his Father the Earl of *Sarisbury* was coming on, he passed over the Thames and joyned with him.

The King vvith the Dukes of *Buckingham* and *Sommerset*, and a well appointed Army, marches against them, at *Northampton* he came

in

in ſight of the Enemy. The Battel began on both ſides, and they fought vehemently, *Humphrey* Duke of *Buchingham*, with *John Talbot*, the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, *Thomas* Lord *Egremont*, *John Bellomont*, and others were ſlain, and on one and the other ſide ten thouſand men. This was in the year 1460. The Queen eſcaped with the Duke of *Sommerſet* and his Sonne, but the King more mindfull of his prayers than of the Battel, was taken and brought priſoner to *London*. *Warwick* preſently got poſſeſſion of the Tower, and *Scales* the Livetenant, whileſt he thought to get away croſſing the Thames in a diſguiſe, was diſcovered, taken and beheaded. The Duke of *York* receiving a Meſſage of this Succeſs, leaving *Ireland*, came Poſt for *London*, vvhere at a ſolemn meeting, he layes open his Right to the Crown of *England*, deriving his Pedigree from *Lyonel* the third Son of *Edward* the third, the elder brother of *John* of *Gaunt*, the Father of *Henry* the fourth the Uſurper. But he deſired not the Kingdom, unleſs his Right vvere made clear to all men; Wherefore a Councel being held, the Title of a King is granted to King *Henry* ſo long as he lived, and *York* is named to ſucceed him. The Queen all this while muſtering an Army in *Scotland*, invades *England* daily; *York* with his younger Sonne of *Rutland*, and with the Earl of *Sarisbury*

went againſt her, leaving for a Guard to King *Henry*, the Earls of *Warwick* and *Norfolk*, but he being circumvented by treachery, was ſlain, and 3000 of his Souldiers with him; nor did ſhe ſpare the Earl of *Rutland*, a childe of twelve years old, though he begged for his life with tears. *Sarisbury*, who was taken alive, and as many as were taken with him, were by the fury of a Woman, all beheaded. This was the end of *Richard Plantagenet* Duke of *York*.

The Earl of *Marſh* hearing of his Fathers death, managed his buſineſs with more vehemency now than before, raiſing an Army of 23000 Men, he overcame the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Ormont*, he took *Owen Tewdor* alive, who had married *Katharine*, Mother to *Henry* the ſixth, and chopped off his Head. But the Queen inſulting at the death of the Duke of *York*, marched toward *London* with her Forces, and was met by the Duke of *Norfolk*, and the Earl of *Warwick*, who durſt have given her Battel, but by the treachery of their followers that forſook them, they were forced to flie for to ſave themſelves. King *Henry* by that Victory came again into the Queens Power; But in the mean time *Edward* Earl of *Marſh* by the general Vote of all Orders was crowned King, according as it was enacted in Parliament, and gather-

gathering a great Army at *Tanton*, he met the King and the Queen, and joyning Battel with them, he overcame their Forces, the moſt valiant fell in the fight, the reſt fled to ſave their lives. The King and Queen eſcaped into *Scotland*, leaving the Kingdom to *Edward* the fourth of that Name.

EDVVARD *the Fourth, King of* England *and* France.

Anno 1461.

EDWARD having got the Crown at laſt, could not peaceably enjoy it; For *Henry* that had fled into *Scotland*, by the aſſiſtance of the *Scots*, makes a new Warre upon him; *Edward* meets him with equal Forces, and fought him at *Exham*, putting *Henry* and his Souldiers to their heels, thirty thouſand men were ſlain on both ſides, *Edward* giving the Command to ſpare none. The Duke of *Sommerſet* who formerly had fallen from *Henry* to *Edward*, deſpairing of the ſucceſs, preſently changed his minde at the report of ſo great an Army, and revolted to *Henry*, was taken and beheaded. *Henry* again retires for *Scotland*,

waiting for another opportunity for his buſineſs; But afterwards returning for *England* in a diſguiſe, he was taken by the *Engliſh*, and delivered up to *Edward*, and by him, that the ſtate of the Kingdom might be the more quiet, he was caſt into priſon.

In the mean time *Edward* took care of his houſhold affairs, and he married his Siſter *Margaret* to *Philip* Duke of *Burgundies* Sonne *Charles*, the Earl of *Warwick* being not a little mad at it, who hated *Burgundy* worſe than the plague, whence and from other cauſes a grievous quarrel roſe between them. For *Warwick* hating the King, drew to his faction his Brothers the Archbiſhop of *York*, and the Marqueſs *Montacute*, by a ſet ſpeech, and after that *George* Duke of *Clarence* the Kings Brother, marrying his Siſter to him, and with the Duke he takes his voyage toward *Callis*, for he was yet Governour of the City, giving order to his Brothers in his abſence to raiſe Tumults in *Yorkſhire*. They carefully obſerved what they had in charge, and quickly cauſing a Tumult, the common people, as it uſually happens, in a blinde rage, though they be raiſed againſt the innocent, march to *London* armed, that there they might ſeek for remedy of miſchiefs, they knew not what. *Edward* hearing of this ſedition, ſends *William Herbert* Earl of *Pembroke*, hoping

hoping to ſubdue the people, who was no ſooner come, but they put him to flight. In the mean while *Warwick* upon this rumour, with the Duke of *Clarence* arrived in *England* from *Callis*, and ſo with joynt Forces they provide for another Battel. *Edward* no way diſmayed with the firſt loſs, ſends *Pembroke* again with a new Army to fight them. But when they fought, his Army was beaten, and he was taken priſoner, and he was beheaded at *Warwick*, with the other Nobility that fell into their hands. Then there was a Treaty of Peace, and Meſſengers being ſent on both parts, the King being animated with hopes of Agreement, dealt the more ſecurely, which *Warwick* was not ignorant of, and therefore falling upon the Kings Tents at night, killing the Guard, he takes the King priſoner, who never dreamt of it, and ſends him firſt to *Warwick*, then into *Yorkſhire* to *Middleham* Caſtle to be ſecured. But the King flattering the Keepers, and bribing them with money, by their connivance ſhortly came to *York*, where the Citizens received him lovingly, and ſo raiſing an Army by the aſſiſtance of *Haſtings*, he came ſafe to *London*. Then there began a Treaty at *London* for Peace, whither *Warwick* and the Duke of *Clarence* were come, but this had no effect. For they being ſtomackfull, and very furious, the matter could

not come ſo farre as Peace, wherefore all being left undone, they depart, and *Warwick* muſters new Forces, of which he makes *Robert Wells* ſonne to *Richard*, Commander in Chief. But the King when he found he muſt engage again in Battel, beſides his expectation, ſent for *Roberts* Father *Richard*, and his Kinſman *Thomas Dimoke* Knight to come to him, who came upon the Kings promiſe of free Conduct; The King commanded them to call off *Robert* from taking Arms, and muſtering Forces ſuddenly, he goes againſt them with *Thomas* and *Richard*, and when they were come to the Enemy, and found that *Robert* would not hearken to his Fathers admonitions, but held up his Arms ſtill, he contrary to his promiſe (a moſt wicked example) cauſeth both the Father and Kinſman to loſe their Heads. They fell to fighting, and *Roberts* Forces were diſcomfited, he himſelf was taken alive, and immediately was beheaded. *Warwick* at the news hereof, with the Duke, not knowing what courſe to ſteer, preſently ſailed into *France* to King *Lewis*, who entertained him magnificently. Queen *Margaret*, Wife to *Henry* came alſo preſently with Prince *Edward*, who took counſel together and made a Covenant between the King, the Earl, and the Queen (*Edward* in vain dehorting from it) and *Warwicks* Daughter was betrothed to *Edward*,

ward, and promiſe made on both ſides, that they would never ceaſe untill the Kingdom ſhould be reſtored either to *Henry*, or to *Edward* his Sonne. A mighty Army is raiſed, and a vaſt Fleet rode at Anchor in the mouth of the *Sienna*. *Warwick* invited by Letters from his friends, with part of his Army, and a Navy prepared, with the Earls of *Oxford* and *Pembroke* came ſafe to *Dartmouth*. (The Queen, who was not yet ready, was to follow when ſhe heard good news) though the Duke of *Burgundy* obſerved his motion. So ſoon as he was landed, and it was publiſhed that he was arrived, 'tis wonderfull what multitudes of people ran to him, with which being fortified, he preſently moves toward *London*. But *Edward* not expecting an Enemy, and leaving the care of raiſing Forces till another time, with his Brother *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter*, took Shipping at *Lyn*, a Sea Town, and ſailed into *Flanders* to *Charles* of *Burgundy*, to his own great diſadvantage. Queen *Elizabeth* being near to her travell, fled to *Weſtminſter*, and made that her *Aſylum*, where ſhe was delivered of her Sonne *Edward*. *Warwick* in the interim without any oppoſition came to *London*, and marching to the Tower, ſet King *Henry* at liberty; and clothing him in his Kingly Ornaments, attending him through the midſt of *London* to S^t^. *Pauls* Church,

Church, after thanks given to God, he ſets him in his Throne. Then a Parliament was called, and all King *Henry* had Enacted was ratified, and the Acts of King *Edward* were made void: *Edward* with his followers was baniſhed as an Enemy of the Kingdom.

Edward in the mean time nothing diſmay'd at this change, raiſing an Army (by the help of *Charles*) of 12000 Men, and with 18 Ships, landed in *Yorkſhire*. His Army was ſo ſmall, that he durſt attempt nothing, only ſent to perſwade the people there, but all in vain, for they either by fear or for reſpect to *Warwick*, would not falſifie their promiſe; but when he gave out that he was come not for the Kingdom, but to recover his Patrimony the Dukedom of *York*, many running to him, he grew ſomewhat ſtronger, and ſo goes to *York*. But the Townſ-men being warned by Letters from *Warwick*, would not let *Edward* come in. He ſpake fairly to the Citizens, and deſired them that they would help their Lord, not to get the Kingdom, but his ancient Inheritance, and ſo taking a ſolemn Oath that he would attempt nothing againſt King *Henry* toward getting the Crown, he was admitted to enter within their Wals. But ſhortly after it appeared more clearly what his intention was; for great ones uſe to pretend Religion to ſerve their turns, which they

they make light of, that with the greateſt perjury they may compaſs what they deſire. He preſently put a Garriſon to ſecure the Town for himſelf, and then hearing that the Enemy made no great haſte, he marches to *Nottingham*, to whom many Noble men came, when they ſaw him fortified with a ſtrong Army. The very Duke of *Clarence* diſtruſting *Henries* ſide, under a pretence of a Parley with his Brother, came willingly to joyn with him.

Warwick alſo was ſolicited to fall off, but he ſtuck faſt to King *Henry*. Then *Edward* in full confidence of his Army came up to *London*. The Citizens were all frighted, hearing that the Duke of *Clarence* was revolted, and the people preſently ran to meet *Edward*, and with a great applauſe ſaluted him for their King. *Sommerſet* and the reſt that followed *Henry* ſhift for themſelves by flight, leaving *Henry* in a Biſhops Palace, who was preſently taken by *Edward* and committed to his former cuſtody. Then giving a generall pardon, he won all the peoples hearts.

Warwick in the mean while muſtering a gallant Army, leads them to *London*, and finding that *Henry* was caſt into Priſon, he ſtopt at St. *Albons*. *Edward* preſently goes againſt him with a mighty power of men, which augmented daily by the coming of more Forces; when both

Armies

Armies came in ſight, at the break of day the Trumpets ſound to Battell. They fight ſtoutly on both ſides, *Edward* with more men, *Henry* with more vertue, vet Valour is vanquiſhed by Force; *Warwick* when he deſpaired of the Victory, rid into the midſt of the enemy, and died gallantly with his Brother the Marqueſs, ten thouſand are ſlain, *Sommerſet* with *Oxford* flies into *Wales*.

The Earl of *Eceter* taking *aſylum* at *Weſtminſter*, *Edward* like a Conquerour, with King *Henry* (for he brought him along with him) enters *London*.

In the mean while the fame was that Queen *Margaret* was landed in *England* with a great Army, and was corroborated for Warre by the Earl of *Sommerſet*, *Devonſhire*, *Pembroke*, and others that joyned with her. Wherefore *Edward* being ſure to meet the enemy every where, removes to *Oxford* with his Army. At length he purſues *Margaret*, whilſt ſhe thought to march into *Wales*, and ſhe by the unexpected coming of *Pembroke*, which was very material, taking counſel with *Sommerſet* what to do, gave him Battell; the fight was fought at *Tewcksbury*, and the diſpute was long and doubtfull, at laſt *Edward* prevailed, and all *Margarets* men almoſt were killed. The Earl of *Devonſhire*, and *Sommerſet's* Brother, and many

many Nobles were ſlain; *Margaret*, Prince *Edward*, the Duke of *Sommerſet*, and others, about twenty Knights were taken, and all of them, except the Queen and Prince *Edward*, were beheaded in two dayes. But *Edward* when he was brought to conferre with the King, and he anſwered more boldly than was convenient, he was moſt cruelly ſlain by the ſtanders by. *George* Duke of *Clarence*, *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter*, *Thomas Grey* Marqueſſe of *Dorſet*, and *William Haſtings*, the Queen afterward, was ſet free for a Ranſome, and ſailed into *France*, and lived alwayes a ſorrowfull and languiſhing life. *Edward* having thus got the Victory, comes in triumph to *London*.

In the interim *Falconbridge*, Sonne to the Earl of *Kent*, who was made Admiral of the Sea by *Warwick*, when he had long plaid the Pirate, coming into *Kent*, raiſed a great force of *Kentiſh* men, and entred into *London*: But the Major of the City raiſing an Army, fell ſuddenly upon him, and took all his booty from him, chaſing him away, and killing many of his men. *Faulconbridge* was taken afterwards and his head cut off. *Pembroke* when he ſaw all was loſt, ſhifting away from the ſnares that were laid for his life, and being more at eaſe by the death of *Wagham*, who lay in wait for him with *Henry* his Nephew by his Brother

Earl

Earl of *Richmond*, and ſome few of his new friends arrived in *France*. *Edward*, that all things for the future might be more calme, tamed the audaciouſneſſe of the *Kentiſh* men, who had laſt taken up Arms againſt him, partly by puniſhment, partly by threats. Alſo King *Henry* that he might give no occaſion to new riſings, was killed in the Tower by the Duke of *Gloceſter*; his Body was buried with no pomp, but the Parricides, and the Authours of his death, (as it ſhall be rehearſed) were afterwards puniſhed for murdering him.

He had reigned thirty eight years and ſix moneths, he had an honeſt minde, a comely perſonage, and was more like a Saint than a King.

Edward to blot out all the footſteps of Rebellion, caſt *George* Archbiſhop of *York* into priſon, who was afterwards ſet at liberty, yet died of grief of minde. Alſo he caſt the Earle of *Oxford* into priſon, where he kept him twelve years. Others in other places were either captivated or put to death. Then that the Rebels might not fly away to neighbour Nations, he made Truce with *James* King of *Scotland* for twenty years. The Earls of *Pembroke* and *Richmond* eſcaped into *France*, where they were courteouſly entertained by the Duke of *Britain*. But afterwards, when as *Edward* requi-

re

red that they ſhould be delivered up to him, and could not prevail, they were kept more carefully by the Duke. Then a Parliament being called, *Henries* Decrees were nulled, and *Edwards* confirmed, and thoſe that were baniſhed their Country for his ſake, as enemies, are called home again; and the Kings Exchequer being extreamly waſted, Subſidies are requeſted. In the *interim* Warre burning between *Lewis* the King of *France*, and the Duke of *Burgundy* (to whom many Princes of *France* joyned themſelves) abhorring the manners of *Lewis* that were grievous to them; *Edward* himſelf, that he might not be wanting to aſſiſt his friend that he was bound unto for ſo many courteſies, provided an Army and a Fleet and ſailed to *Callis*. *Charles* was preſently with him, and congratulates his Victory over the Rebels, and invites him that was willing to enter upon a new Warre: But *Lewis* being mightily afraid of two ſuch potent enemies, ſent Embaſſadours to *Edward*. The two Kings held a large Conference, who met at *Pictuigny*, where a League was made for many yeares, 70000 Ducats being paid to *Edward* for his charges, and 50000 to be paid yearly, and *Elizabeth* Daughter to *Edward* was married to *Charles* Sonne to *Lewis*: And ſo Peace being agreed upon, *Charles* and *Luxemburg* that joyned

ed with him in the Warre, being not a little vexed at it, *Edward* came firſt to *Callis*, and from thence to *England*. *Luxenburgh* was afterwards taken in fight and loſt his Head at *Paris*. *Edward* though he had ſetled Peace at home and abroad, yet thinking nothing ſafe enough for him, whilſt *Henry* Earl of *Richmond* was alive, whoſe right to the Crown he much feared; wherefore ſending Meſſengers to the Duke of *Britain*, what by gifts, what by promiſes, he prevailed to have the Earl delivered: But the Duke repenting what he had yeilded to, called back the gallant young man that was now gone on his journey to be put to death, and preſerved him from it, ſending *Edwards* Embaſſadours without their prey home again. *Edward* who was bountifull to all, ſhewed himſelf cruel to none but his Brother the Duke of *Clarence*, whom he ſuffered to be drown'd in a Pipe of *Malmſey*. The Warre began again with the *Scots*, the Duke of *Albany* the brother of King *James* being the cauſe of it. *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter* was ſent into *Scotland*, but the *Scot* not truſting to his ſmall Forces, ſued for peace. The Duke of *Albany*, who was the Authour of the Warre, and knew that he was hated by his Brother for it, fled into *France* and was killed there in a fight on Horſback. Now it remained that *Edward* ſhould

make

make Warre with the *French*, who had not kept the Articles of agreement, but he was conquered by another enemy which he foreſaw not, for falling into a new diſeaſe not underſtood by the Phyſitians, he died in a few dayes in the 50 year of his age, and of his Reign the 23. In the year of our Lord 1483. and lieth buried at *Windſor*.

EDWARD *the Fifth*, *and* RICHARD *the Thi d*, *King of* England *and* France.

Anno 1483.

EDWARD the fourth being dead, his eldeſt Sonne EDWARD ſucceeded; but he in his Reign was under Governours, *Antony Rivarius* his Uncle, *Thomas Wagham* Chamberlain, and *Richard Grey*, Knights, who being ſent for by the Queens Letters, came in haſte to *London* with the Prince. Alſo *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter*, who after his Brothers death had the chiefe power, was at *York*, but hearing of the Kings death, he came to *London* vvith a

ſmall Army: For he by order from his Brother *Edward* vvas to govern the Prince in his nonage. So ſoon as his Brother vvas dead, he was mindfull to uſurp the Kingdom: he coming to *London* overtook this young King *Edward* on the vvay, whom he preſently took into his charge, and ſent his Tutours, *Riverius*, *Wagham*, and *Grey*, to *Pomfret* Caſtle to be kept ſafe, vvhich thing being known at *London*, the Queen, vvho well knew the perverſe minde of *Richard*, vvith her other Sonne *Richard*, and her Daughters, fled to *Weſtminſter* for refuge, that ſhe might be the more ſecure from *Richards* violence.

Richard in the mean time came to *London* vvith *Edward*, and went to the Biſhop of *Londons* houſe to reſide. But he not content with *Edwards* being in his power, that he might the more ſafely look to his buſineſſe, endeavours to get the other Brother that was fled to Sanctuary with his Mother, under a colour of comforting the Kings ſorrowfull minde; and drawing the Lords to be of the ſame opinion, he ſent thither, amongſt others, *Thomas* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, vvho with fair ſpeeches mingled with threats, brings the innocent child from his Mothers Arms.

Richard now having got vvhat he aimed at, ſent him to the Tower in great pomp, but vvith great lamentation. He in the mean time, vvhat by rewards, vvhat by Religious diſſimulation, and

and an affected proneneſs of his own minde, laboured to knit unto himſelf the mindes of the Lords and Commons, to cover the great deſire he had of the Crown deeply rooted in his heart, ſo that no man could tell vvhither his purpoſes tended. But *Haſtings*, a man of an honeſt heart, did daily preſs that due Honour ſhould be given to the King; vvhom *Richard*, either becauſe he vvas troubleſom to him, or elſe ſaw too farre into the buſineſs, labours to diſpatch above all the reſt, and ſo craftily charging him of that he vvas no way guilty of, he commanded the Souldiers that vvere ready for ſuch ſervice, to kill him preſently, he being neither queſtioned nor found guilty. The fault was laid on this vvorthy man, that he had committed adultery with one *Joan* King *Edward* the fourth's Concubine, vvhom *Richard* accuſed purpoſely, as though vvith the Queen-Mother he had made the King impotent by Magick Art. Alſo he caſt into priſon the Prelates of *York* and *Ely*, with *Stanley*: but this man was ſhortly releaſed. He ſent others away to other places, that they might not obſtruct his riſing to the Crown. Then by Letters he gave vvarning to the Keeper of *Pomfret* Caſtle, that he ſhould behead *Riverius*, *Gray*, and *Wagham*, vvho was over-obedient to the command. Alſo he ſecured himſelf vvith a ſtrong Guard, (as the manner is for

Shore's wife

Tyrants to be afraid of every thing) and to deceive the credulous people, he had a conſultation vvith one *Ralph Shaw*, a very famous Divine, vvhom the people much admired, ſtoutly boaſting that he was the true Sonne of his Father *Richard*, but that his Brother *Edward* was a Baſtard, and he farther deſired him that he would ſay ſo much in the Pulpit concerning his right, unto the people; and that he was a Man, *Edward* but a Childe, unfit for Government, and by his imbecillity the Common-wealth might be ruined, and ſo forth. *Ralph* whether for fear or madneſs, eaſily yeilds to him, and having made a Sermon from a Text fit for the purpoſe, he began to ſpeak freely to the people, threatning great unhappineſs to thoſe men who ſhould preferre a baſtard before lawfull ſucceſſion. The people deceived by the Authority of the Preacher, and frighted by threats, did wonderfully waver this way and that way, and began to prefer *Richard* a Man, before *Edward* a Childe, to wiſh for a change of the Governour, to fore-ſpeak all the worſt, to accuſe the innocent Mother for a Whore. But *Ralph* being admoniſhed of this thing by his friends, and returning to a better minde, was ſo much aſhamed of it, that afterward he lived privately and died of grief. Alſo the Duke of *Buckingham* a little after making a ſpeech to the *Londoners* in Coun-

Counſell, did not ſpare to exhort them, and to admoniſh them of their duty, boaſting moreover highly of *Richards* goodneſs and mildneſs of minde; to him a great part conſented, part followed their leaders, not daring to reſiſt, part thought it neceſſary to obey the time and the reaſon of things, and ſo all ſwore fidelity to *Richard*. In the year 1483. Preſently they go to *Richard*, and acquaint him what was done, he began to refuſe it, and to exhort them to continue faithfull unto *Edward* their young King, to deteſt ſuch a damnable wickedneſs, but at laſt, as it were, againſt his will, he received the Enſignes of the Kingdom, and with his Wife *Anne* was Crowned King.

He labours to make that power good by force which he got by craft, for being compaſſed with a choice number of Souldiers for his Guard, he thought himſelf ſafe enough from all injury. Yet he feared the multitude of the *Londoners*, for Tyrants think themſelves ſafe in no place, wherefore he reſolves to go to *York*, having ſetled the buſineſs at *London*. But in the way (when he hoped for no quiet whilſt his Nephews were alive) he writ Letters to the Lievtenant of the Tower, *Robert Brakenbury*, that ſo ſoon as he could, by any means, he ſhould deſtroy the young King *Edward* and his Brother in the Tower, when he refuſed and

delayed, he gave that charge to *James Tyrel*, who coming to *London* in great poverty, he ſtifled the young children, caſting pillows upon them. The childrens death was divulged, *Richard* not being againſt it, it is wonderfull how great amazement ſeized on the minds of all men, every one lamented the unhappineſs of the children, and pitied them, and they began to ſpeak what hopes they had of him, who ſpared not his own near kindred, but ſhed their blood, to ſay nothing of the Mother and her Daughters. Certainly, the immortall God, who will not ſuffer great ſins to go unpuniſhed, revenged on the innocent children the perjury of their Father committed at *York*, and the death of the Duke of *Clarence*, whom he wickedly murdered.

But the Duke of *Buckingham*, who had taken ſuch pains for *Richard*, began now to deteſt his horrid wickedneſs, and fell away from him, took counſell with the Biſhop of *Ely*, who was committed to his cuſtody, how to reſtore *Henry* Earl of *Richmond* (to whom the Kingdom of right belonged next unto, for that he deſcended from *John* of *Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaſter*, his great Grandfather) and to root out *Richard* a monſter of men: Theſe therefore diſcloſed their buſineſs to others, they preſently ſend away *Hugh Conway*, and *Thomas Ranmey* into *Brittany*,

Brittany, who ſhould acquaint the Earl of the combination, and he ſhould impart it to the Duke of *Brittany*.

The Duke, though he were much importuned by *Richards* Letters to keep *Henry* in priſon, promiſed aſſiſtance.

Richard in the mean time who had notice of the conſultations of *Buckingham*, ſent for him again and again to come unto him, but when he refuſed to come, they fall to their Arms on both ſides. The Duke muſtering preſently ſome *Welſh* Forces and others, came to *Gloceſter* over the River to meet *Richard* that had a mighty Army with him. But the Souldiers vvhich he had procured voluntarily, rather than for their pay, were not very firme, but ran from him before he came in ſight of the enemy. The Duke was now almoſt left all alone, only his Lacky remained with him, who was forced to fly to ſhift for himſelf, and went to *Humphrey Banniſters*, he unmindfull of all former favours, delivered him afterwards to *Richard*, who cut off his Head. When this was commonly reported, all the Conſpiratours ran one one way, and another another way, ſome to places of refuge, ſome to the Duke of *Brittany* to the Earl.

Richard had heard in the mean time, that the Duke did not onely not hurt the Earl, but

had reſolved to aſſiſt him, wherefore he preſently provides a Fleet, that if perhaps the Earl ſhould come, he might repulſe him every where from the *Engliſh* Coaſts.

Henry in the mean time with forty Ships, and 5000 *Brittains* ſailed for *England*; but a tempeſt aroſe and ſcattered his Ships, and he almoſt was quit of all his Forces, and was driven to *Cornwall*, vvhere coming on Land, when he ſaw a great Army he retreated to his Shipping again, weighed Anchor, and ſaild to Sea. And being very penſive vvhen he heard of *Buckinghams* death, void of all counſell, he returned again to *Brittany* in *France*. But by the coming of the Nobility he took heart once more, and promiſed before the Altar, to marry *Elizabeth*, *Edwards* Daughter, if the buſineſs ſhould ſucceed to his minde, and ſo afreſh an Oath of fidelity was taken by them all.

Richard in the mean time did rage fiercely againſt all thoſe that followed the Earl, whereſoever he could lay hold on them. *Thomas* Earl of *Dorſet*, who had fled to him, was baniſhed both by Sea and Land.

Alſo he made a Covenant with the *Scotch* King, and confirmed it, giving his Siſter *Anne* to the *Scotch* Kings Sonne. *Richard* in the interim layes new traps for Earl *Henry*, by corrupting

rupting the Dukes Treaſurer with money. But he eſcaped them, the matter being detected by Biſhop *Morton*. When the fraud was known to the Duke himſelf, he was ſo enraged againſt the Treaſurer, that he cauſed this wicked man, for that and other wicked deeds to be hanged. The Earl *Henry* was now come into *France*, where the Earl of *Oxford* eſcaped from his impriſonment, came and joyned with him, and promiſed his faithfull endeavour in all affairs: To whom ſome Noble men, that ſtudied at *Paris*, came to aſſiſt, willingly offering their aid, amongſt whom was *Richard Fox* the famouſeſt Scholar in thoſe dayes, whom the Earl took to be of his privy-Counſell, and when he had gaind the Kingdom afterwards, he made him Biſhop of *Wincheſter*.

But *Richard* to hinder Earl *Henry's* Marriage with *Elizabeth*, partly by flattery, partly by fear, partly by promiſe, he prevailed ſo farre with Queen *Elizabeth*, that ſhe ſhould entruſt her Daughters with him, and ſhould write her Letters to her Sonne the Marqueſs of *Dorſet*, who was near to Earl *Henry*, whereby ſhe ſhould command him to return home without delay, leaving the Earls ſociety. That all things were now pacified, and that her family was received into the Kings favour. *Richard* all this while having gotten the Queens Daughters, that

that he might totally deſtroy the intention of *Henry*, he thought himſelf to marry *Elizabeth* his Brothers Daughter, his former Wife alſo was yet alive: But ſhe alſo when other projects would not ſuit, was taken privately away by poyſon. In the mean while he tries all means to win *Elizabeth* to affect him, and if he could not obtain her, he was reſolved to joyn violence to his prayers. But he was ſo much urged with care and forraign fear, that he had no time for luſt to ſhew it ſelf. In the interim *Stanley* had a command to Muſter an Army, but he muſt not go forth, before he had given unto *Richard* for a pawn and pledge of his fidelity, his eldeſt Sonne the Lord *Strange*. A fame was alſo ſpread on purpoſe that *Henry* had implored help from the *French* in vain, and that there was no fear of his coming. *Richard* dealt ſomething careleſly and unwiſely, diſcharging the Navy he had ſent to ſcour the *Engliſh* Coaſts.

Henry was advertiſed how things ſtood, and arrived in *England* with but 2000 Souldiers in pay. Preſently *Rice Thomas*, and *John Savage*, two the moſt Potent men in *Wales*, having collected ſome Forces, came to joyn vvith *Henry*. *Pembroke* with ſome others did the like. *Stanley* though he wiſhed vvell, yet fearing leaſt his Sonne ſhould be miſerably tortured by the King,

King, delayed his intention untill ſome other opportunity.

Richard all this time vvas wonderfull ſluggiſh and careleſs, but vvhen he heard of the revolt of his Subjects, he raiſed what men he could ſcrape up, and went againſt *Henry*.

He pitched his Tent at *Boſworth* field, vvhen he ſaw the enemy intended to fight, he alſo made ready his men: At laſt they fall on, and fought a ſharp Battell on both ſides. But *Stanley* who came later, in the heat of the Battell, brought freſh Forces and joyned vvith *Henry*, whereby he vvas not a little animated, for otherwiſe he was farre inferiour to *Richard* in men, and ſo takes heart again. The King himſelf at laſt entred the fight, vvho after he had given wonderfull tokens of his Valour, had killed *Henries* Standard-bearer, put *Henry* himſelf in danger, he was ſurrounded by multitudes of Souldiers, and fighting valiantly, was ſlain. *Henry* got the Victory by *Richards* death, for the Earl of *Northumberland*, vvho brought up the rear of *Richards* Army, as he came againſt his will, ſo he refuſed to fight any longer. Not above 1000 were ſlain of the Kings ſide, and of *Henries* ſide, hardly 100. The Nobility that yeilded were pardoned, and *Henry* had forthwith the Crown ſet on his Head, which they had taken from *Richards* Head, and he is ſaluted

luted King by all with a generall acclamation. *Richards* body was found amongſt the dead, and vvas buried with no Honour at *Leiceſter*.

Henry *the Seventh, King of* England *and* France.

Anno 1486.

Henry came to the Kingdom both by Right and Valour, and was Crowned at *Weſtminſter*, Anno 1486, the day before the Calends of *November*.

Then calling a Parliament he is diſcharged of the Treaſon *Richard* laid to him, and he gave Rewards and Honours to ſome that were grieved.

He married *Elizabeth* the Daughter to *Edward* the fourth, and by that Marriage the old quarrell between the White Roſe and the Red was ended. At his firſt entrance he kept a ſtrong Guard about him, either for his powers or Majeſty; vvhich cuſtom is continued to our dayes. The *Engliſh* Sweat was riſe about this time, a diſeaſe never known before, it deſtroyed abundance of men, but the ſharper the diſ-

eaſe

eaſe was, the ſhorter time it laſted. Then new troubles aroſe in the North of *England*, which were eaſily vanquiſhed by *Lovels* flight, and *Staffords* death.

But a new tumult that grew from meer opinion and perſwaſion, gave cauſe for new cares, for one *Simon* a Prieſt reports falſly that a Scholar of his, vvho was very like (vvhich made the Prieſt the bolder to give it out) vvas the Sonne to *Edward* Duke of *Clarence* (vvhich was caſt into priſon a little before by *Henry*) and he ſaild with him into *Ireland*, and prevailed ſo much amongſt the Peers there, that the youth was ſaluted King at *Dublin*. Then obtaining help from *Margaret* wife to *Burgundy*, he comes into *England*, to vvhom thoſe Lords that favoured the cauſe of *Plantagenet* joyned themſelves, though they knew the fraud, yet they hoped to bring on the deſign. But *Henry* went againſt them in time, and after a moſt eager fight he ſlew the Earl of *Lincoln*, and other of the chief men that followed him. But he ſpared *Lambert* this counterfeit Earl, by reaſon of his youth and innocency, and he was made the Kings ſervant; *Simondus* eſcaped becauſe he was Prieſt.

Then ſending Embaſſadours into *Scotland*, he treated for peace, but when he could not procure it, in regard of the malice of the Subjects,

jects, and Truce was made for seven years. But a difference rising between *Charles* King of *France*, and *Francis* Duke of *Brittany*, *Henry* that he might displease neither side, being engaged to both, made himself Umpire to end the quarrel between them, but when he could do nothing by his Embassadours, they fell to Arms.

Edward Lord *Vdevill* the Queens Uncle, without the knowledge of the King, assisted the Duke of *Brittany* with 400 choice men, but the *French* afterwards getting the Victory, the Duke and they were all slain. The Duke being dead, the contest ended. In the mean time in *Yorkshire* troubles arose, because of Tribute required, one *John Chambers* was the Authour of them. *Henry* Earl of *Northumberland*, Governour of that Countrey, was basely slain by one of the factious multitude, then they came on by Troops, *John Egrimont* Knight being their Leader. But the King fell on them presently, and easily dissipated the tumultuous rabble, punishing severely the Authours of it: But *Egrimont* fled to *Margaret* into *Burgundy*, which was the common place of refuge for the Rebels; yet there was nothing abated of the Tribute to be paid.

A great Tumult about that time fell in *Scotland*, the Subjects rising against *James* King of *Scotland*,

Scotland, and they forced his Sonne *James* to take part with them. *Henry* King of *England*, *Charles* King of *France*, and the Pope, could not reconcile this quarrel, and when the Subjects gave a harsh answer, the Battell began at *Strevelin*, where the Subjects got the Victory, and the King himself, though his Sonne was against it, was cruelly slain in a Mill. Then a jarring arose between *Frederick* the Emperour, and some Cities in *Flanders*; the *French* came to assist the Emperour: But *Henry* not enduring the *French* so near to *Callis*, sent the Lord *Morley* with a supply of a thousand men, who with two thousand of his Souldiers vanquished eight thousand of the enemies, but he himself was slain. The *French* to revenge this loss, had almost won *Newport*, but being frighted at the coming of the *English*, they lost the Victory. *Maximilian* the Emperour, when he endeavoured to marry *Anne* Daughter to *Francis* Duke of *Brittany*, which he had betrothed by Embassadours, he is hindered by the *French* King, to whom he had espoused his Daughter *Margaret*, for he divorcing *Margaret*, gaping after the Dukedom of *Brittany*, by force got *Anne* into his power, and solemnly made her his Wife. *Henry* was wonderfully offended at this fraud, and asked Subsidies from his Parliament, taking counsell to make a Warre upon

the *French* King. At length he landed at *Callis* with a ſmall Army, and beſieged *Bononia*, but finding *Maximilian* unprepared, for vvhoſe ſake he had undertaken this Warre, he eaſily yeilded to make Peace, (obtaining from the *French* a great ſumme of Money, and a yearly revenue) and ſo returned for *England*. *Margaret* Wife to the Duke of *Burgundy*, alwayes ſtudied miſchief againſt the *Engliſh*, for ſhe bred up for ſome moneths in her Court, a certain young man vvho was called *Peterkin*, or *Perken Warbech*, and obtruded him upon the *Engliſh* Nation, for *Richard* the Sonne of *Edward* the fourth, vvho, was ſaid, to have been ſtifled. Many of the Nobility of *England*, either deceived by the appearance, or becauſe they deſired innovation, joyn with that ſuppoſed *Richard*; amongſt whom was *William Stanley*, who helped *Peter* with money, *Stanley* was taken, convicted, and loſt his Head, though he were the principall cauſe whereby *Henry* came to the Crown.

Peter in the mean time having got a tumultuous number of men, landed in *Kent*, where there were taken of his men 160, amongſt vvhom were five Captains, who firſt landed, they were hanged at *London*, and other places. *Peter*, when he little prevailed there, ſails into *Ireland*, where he vvas magnificently entertained

tained by the Inhabitants, who much honoured the name of the *Plantagenets*. But when he could expect little help thence from a poore weak people, he makes haſte into *Scotland*. The *Scot* had him in high eſteem, and being deceived by his preſence or courtly Carriage, which *Margaret* had bred him to ſufficiently in her Palace, he gives him in Marriage, *Katharine* the Daughter of the Earl of *Huntley*, and ſent him toward the Borders of *England* with a great Army to do vvhat he could, in hopes to attaine ſome of the Subjects to him, either by feare or affection, but all proved in vain.

Henry being wonderfully offended by reaſon of the *Scots* invaſion, muſters an Army, and marches againſt the *Scots* under the Command of *Danby*, but he was called back again to ſuppreſs a Rebellion that roſe in *Cornwall* by reaſon of Tribute to be paid. The *Corniſh*, the Lord Lievtenant *Audley* being their Leader, march for *London*, but when they came thither, they were vanquiſhed and ſcatterered by the Royaliſts, two thouſand of them being ſlain, and many taken, the greateſt part of them were pardoned, except the Ring-leaders, for *Audley* was ignominiouſly drawn to execution, and loſt his head; and others that put the people forward, as *Thomas Flammok*, *Michael* Son to

Joseph a Blacksmith were hanged up.

The *Scot* takes occasion hereby during these Tumults to go forward on his enterprise, and spoils the Frontiers of *England* again, and then besieged the Castle of *Durham*, but the Earl of *Surrey*, collecting an Army of 20000 Men, and with a great Navy, not only raised the siege, but pursued the Enemies into *Scotland*, ruin'd many of their Forts and Castles, and when they would not stand to fight with him, he returned to *Barwick*.

By the Mediation of the King of *Spain* Truce was made between *England* and *Scotland* for some years, but on this condition that *Perkin Warbech* must leave *Scotland*. He when he was gone from thence, hearing that new Tumults were up in *Cornwall*, came thither with a few Souldiers out of *Ireland*, whither he had transported himselfe and his Family, and what by fair words, what by pretences, he drew some of the Inhabitants to his side, and so mustering about three thousand Souldiers, he beleaguer'd *Exceter*, but when he heard of the Kings March he forsook his Army, and fled to the Altar; The King in the mean time being now certain of his flight, caused diligent search to be made for him, his Wife *Katharine* a very beautifull Woman, and of a most noble Family, was taken and delivered up to the King, who by reason

of

of her Beauty and Deſcent, aſſigned to her a yearly Revenue. Then *Henry* puniſhed the Rebels, but he laid only a ſmall Penance on them, and ſo ſet them at liberty. *Peter* when he had long ſtaid in Sanctuary, and found no place of ſafety, at laſt yeelded up himſelf voluntarily, and was ſent Priſoner to the Tower.

In the *interim*, *Sebaſtian Gabat*, a Citizen of *Genoa*, but born at *Briſtow*, procuring from *Henry* one or two Ships, ſailed to new Countreys in the Weſt, and after two years returned again into *England*. *Peter* who (we ſaid) was caſt into Priſon, made his eſcape ſhortly after, and went to *Richmond*, he was taken again, and made a publick ſhame, and once more impriſoned in the Tower, but when he began a new Conſpiracy with the Earl of *Warwick*, whoſe name *Lambert* had taken, and with ſome other familiar Friends of the Lievtenant of the Tower, he was drawn to Execution, and was hanged, together with two of the Lievtenants Servants. Alſo *Warwick* that he might give no more cauſe for new troubles, was beheaded after a ſhort time. This was the eldeſt Sonne of the Duke of *Clarence*, and the laſt male offſpring of the Family of the *Plantagenets*, who was put in priſon from his very childhood, a thing beyond the knowledge and memory of

man. Hence aroſe a new ſedition, and of the ſame kinde; For *Patrick* an *Auguſtin* Frier, counterfeiting a new Earl of *Warwick* of one of his Scholars, ſtirred up the people to Rebellion in his Pulpit, but he and his Scholar were taken. The young man was hanged, *Patrick* was caſt into perpetuall impriſonment, ſuch was the reverence they gave at that time to holy Orders, that they would never put to death any of them, though they were guilty of high Treaſon. Marriages were made about this time between *Katharine* the King of *Spains* Daughter, and *Arthur* Prince of *Wales*, and between *Henries* Daughter, and *James* King of *Scotland*. From this laſt Marriage proceeded at length *Mary Stuart*, Mother to King *James*, who was Father to *Charles*, and the Kingdoms were united. *Arthur* five moneths after his Marriage died in *Wales*. But *Henry* that he might not be defrauded of the Dowry and Friendſhip of the King of *Spain*, married *Katharine* (by the Popes Indulgence) to *Henry* his ſecond Sonne, who was unwilling to it.

Edmund Pool Earl of *Suffolk*, Sonne to *Elizabeth* Siſter to *Edward* the fourth, being offended with the King at that time for ſome private injury, conſpired againſt him in *Flanders*; The matter being diſcovered, and the Conſpirators taken, he only eſcaped to *Philip*

Arch-

Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*. But *Philip* by the death of *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*, having got the Kingdom (in the name of his Wife *Joan*, who was the Kings Daughter, Siſter to *Katharine*, which (as was ſaid) was married to *Arthur* Prince of *Wales*) took his journey thither, and by a contrary Tempeſt was brought into *England*. King *Henry* went to meet him with all honour, and obtained from him the Earl of *Suffolk* upon the Condition that no violence ſhould be offered to his Life. *Henry* caſt him into Priſon, and ſpared his Life, but after he loſt his Head in the Raign of *Henry* the Eighth.

Henry being now in the height of glory, had procured his Subjects fidelity, and reſpect from his Neighbours. He was very happy, had he not about the end of his Raign and Life been ſo greedy after the goods and wealth of his Subjects.

He was long ſick of the Gout, and afterwards he fell into an *Aſthma* alſo, in the 52 year of his Life, and the 23 year of his Raign, he died in the year 1508. and lieth buried at *Weſtminſter*.

Henry *the Eighth, King of* England, France *and* Ireland.

Anno 1508.

Henry the Eighth having got the Kingdom, at the beginning he behaved himself with great Obedience, Prudence and Juſtice. Marrying *Katharine* his Brothers Wife, which his Father had betrothed; He choſe the wiſeſt Counſellours, and he executed the curſed Miniſters of his Fathers exaction. He ſpent then the firſt year of his Raign in Tilting and other Recreations. But at the requeſt of the King of *Spain* the Queens Father, an expedition was undertaken into *Spain* againſt the *Moors*, but before the *Engliſh* came, there was a Peace made with the *Moors*, and ſo it was but loſt labour, and nothing being done, only the Captain receiving honours from the King, returned again for *England*.

Edward Poining a Knight was ſent with 1500 Bowmen to *Charles* Prince of *Spain* to aſſiſt him againſt the Duke of *Gelderland*, he ſucceeded proſperouſly, and loaded with rewards he came back again.

In

In the mean time a *Scotch* Pirate one *Burton*, who was wonderfull bold and valiant, did great miſchief about the Coaſts of *England*, the Admiral of the Sea was ſent out after him, after a doubtfull and a notable fight, he was conquered and ſlain, but his followers were pardoned; A great Example of the Kings Mercy.

In the mean time Warre grew between the *French* King and the Pope; *Henry* admoniſhed the *French* man to deſiſt, and when he could not prevail with him, he proclaimed Warre againſt him, and made a Confederacy with *Maximilian* the Emperour, and with *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*. The *Spaniard* had intreated *Henry* to ſend an Army into *Biſcay*, and joyning his Forces with his, that he ſhould make the *French* work from that part; Whereupon preſently *Thomas Gray* Marqueſs of *Dorſet* is ſent thither with other Nobility, and 10000 Souldiers, he, when he came thither, did not long wait for the *Spaniards* aſſiſtance; For the Duke of *Alba* took in the mean time by Force the Kingdom of *Navarre* from the *French*, endeavouring the profit of his own King. But the *Engliſh* that they might not ſeem to do nothing in *Guyan*, ſubduing ſome Towns that were not conſiderable, fell into that neceſſity of proviſion (the *Spaniard* affording them none) that

many of them died miſerably for hunger, contracting alſo diſeaſes by ſuch unuſual diet, and the reſt brake forth into open Rebellion. The Lord *Howard*, who had the diſpoſing of all affairs, whilſt the Marqueſs was ſick, hardly eſcaped from being ſlain; Wherefore he was forced to provide Ships, and to bring theſe factious people home again.

Edward Howard Admiral at Sea, did wonderfully depopulate *Britanny* by fire and ſword, and vanquiſhed the Forces of the *Britans* in Battel, though they farre exceeded thoſe he had, and ſo with his Ships laden with the ſpoil, he ſailed towards the Iſle of *Wight*, whilſt *Henry* at *London* recreated himſelf with Tilting and other courtly delights.

In the mean time in *France* in the *Britiſh* Sea, there was almoſt an equal fight for loſs between the *Engliſh* and the *French* Ships, and the Victory was doubtfull. After this the *Engliſh* ſet upon the *French* Ships very indiſcreetly in the very Haven, with a great loſſe to themſelves and their Admiral, whereby they were forced to ſound a retreat and be gone. Whereupon the *French* began to wax more inſolent, to do miſchief on the Coaſts of *England*, and to burn ſome Cities, untill by the vigilancy of *Howard*, who was put into the others place, they were kept in.

Henry was reſolved to make a Warre indeed with *France*, and ſent *George Talbot* before with the principal Nobility, and 8000 Souldiers only to *Callis*, then he ſent *Charles Sommerſet*, and other Lords with 6000 Souldiers, he himſelf being to come after them. When the Admirals met, they fell upon *Tarvenne* with joynt Forces. *Henry* ſhortly after came to them with 9000 Souldiers, and with a great number of Pioneers. Alſo *Maximilian* the Emperour, which was a rare example, took Pay under King *Henry*. Yet though he ſerved under the *Engliſh*, he was received as an Emperour ſhould be, and for the honour of his Majeſty. Then the *French* Horſe purpoſing to relieve the City with proviſion, were repulſed by the *Engliſh*, the Duke of *Longovil* being taken, and 240 more, whereupon a wonderfull fear and deſpair fell upon the Townſmen; ſo the *Engliſh* preſſing them ſore, they were forced to ſurrender. The Souldiers had leave to depart with their Arms, the Wals were laid level with the ground, the City, excepting the chief Church, and the Palace, were conſumed with fire. Then he marched to *Tourney*, and beleaguer'd the City, they refuſing to yeeld, he quickly became Maſter of it, cauſing the Citizens to take an Oath of fidelity. And when he provoked the *French* to fight, and could not make them accept of it, becauſe the Winter

Winter was now hard by, he made *Poyning* Governour of it, and returned himſelf for *England*.

In the mean while the *Scotch* at the inſtigation of the *French* fell upon the *Engliſh* Frontiers. Their General was the Lord *Humes*, who with ſeven or eight thouſand men waſted the Borders. But *Edward Bulmir* ſuddenly came upon him, and took all the booty from him, he himſelf hardly eſcaped, ſix hundred of his men being ſlain, and four hundred taken. But *James* with an Army of ſixty thouſand men, entred the skirts of *England*, who was met by the Earl of *Surrey*, *Henry* his Deputy in thoſe parts, at *Bramſton* with ſix and twenty thouſand men, and joyning Battell, the *Engliſh* wan the day by their great valour, and the *Scots* loſt it by their great confidence. *James* himſelf with two Earls, three Biſhops, and eight thouſand Souldiers were ſlain, no fewer were taken; nor was this Victory wan by the *Engliſh* without loſſe of blood, it was fought in the year 1513.

Henry coming out of *France*, made the Earl of *Surrey*, becauſe he had ſo well managed his buſineſs Duke of *Norfolk*, and other Lords who had done good ſervice, received Honours as they deſerved. He gave alſo to *Thomas Wolſey* the Biſhoprick of *Lincoln*. This man to be often

often named by us, came from a poor parentage to great Honour, and at last was made a Cardinal, and governed the Common-wealth of *England* very wisely.

Pope *Julius* the second, at this time gave to *Henry* great Honour, sending unto him a Cap of Maintenance, a Sword, and the Title *Of the most Christian King*, which Grace *Henry* received with Tiltings, and other pompous Shews, wherein he himself did alwayes bear the principal part.

In the interim *Mary* the Kings Sister was espoused to the Prince of *Spain*, but becaus the Embassadours of *Spain* made delayes, she was betrothed to the *French*, desiring it, and having had their fill of Warre. But before the matter was published, *John* the Admiral of the *French* first ruined one Village in *England*, and *John Wallop* in revenge of this injury burnt one and twenty in *France*; But at last a League was made, and they ceased from Warre. The *French man* lived not above three moneths after his Marriage, and the lascivious old man being dead, *Mary* (by *Henries* consent) was married to the Duke of *Suffolk*. *Wolsey* about this time was honoured with a Cardinals Cap, and is created by the King Chancellour of *England*. And Cardinal *Campeius* was sent to *Henry* to desire assistance to make Warre against the *Turk*, but he

he loſt his labour, for that cheat of raiſing money was grown ſtale. But *Matthias* the Cardinal being ſent by the Emperour *Maximilian* for the ſame purpoſe, prevailed at the requeſt of *Wolſey*.

At that time *Henry* was in great danger of his life. For as he went a Hawking, the Pole broke that he leaped over the Ditches withall, and he was almoſt ſmothered in mire and dirt, but his Lackey drew him out in time, and ſaved his life. In the mean while a Sedition grew at *London* between the Citizens and ſtrangers, not without blood-ſhed, which was qualified by the death of the Ring-leaders, and pardon to the reſt.

Tourney at this time, upon Conditions, and under colour of Matrimony between the *Dolphin* and *Mary* King *Henries* Daughter, is delivered up to the *French*, and Hoſtages being given, a League is confirmed between them. *Maximilian* being dead, the Empire deſcended to *Charles* King of *Caſtile* the fifth of that Name.

Henry in the mean while was idle for lack of Warre, ſpending his time in Tiltings, Dancings, Pleaſures, and other Courtly Delights. Then that Peace might not be without its Glory, a ſolemn Meeting was appointed between the two Kings of *England* and *France*. For that purpoſe

poſe a magnificent Palace of Wood was built in *France*. At laſt they met in wonderfull ſtate, they applied themſelves to Turnaments, running at the Ring, and other ſuch Recreations, and an Agreement was renewed between the Emperour, and the Kings of *England* and *France*.

Woolſey in the *interim* did vvhat he pleaſed, he found no hinderance in his attempts whatſoever. He charged the Duke of *Buckingham* of high Treaſon, whether it were ſo, or out of envy is uncertain, but the Duke loſt his Head for it.

A new cauſe is given for a Warre between the Emperour and the King of *France*, wherefore *Woolſey* is ſent Umpire between both, who did not behave himſelfe ſo prudently as loftily, whereby he incurred the *French* Kings diſpleaſure. *Hugh* of *Moncada* beſieged *Tourney*; and though the *French* did his beſt to relieve it, yet he became Maſter of it.

Henry in the mean while, becauſe he had written a Book againſt *Luther*, had the Title given him, to be *Defender of the Faith*, which hath paſſed to all his ſucceſſours.

At that time cauſe was given of a Warre between the *French* and the *Scotch* King, by occaſion of the Duke of *Albany*, and by reaſon the *French* had not paid the money which he promiſed

ſed to *Mary Henries* Siſter, ſo the Covenant being broken, they fell to Warre, *William* the ſonne of *William* a Knight, the Admiral-Lievtenant, with eight and twenty Ships, ſpoiled the Coaſts of *Scotland*, burnt their Shipping, and ſo returned home.

Charles the Emperour in the mean time came to *London*, where he was received in great ſtate and honour, and with a ſolemn Ceremony was graced with the Order of the Garter. Then under pretence of conducting the Emperour into *Spain* by ſhipping, the Earl of *Surrey* the Kings Admiral ſets upon *Brittany*, and conquers *Morlays*, who alſo was again ſent into *France* with a great Army, and he ruined many Towns and Caſtles, and conſumed them by fire, but he attempted the Fort *Heding* in vain, having left his great Guns at home, and ſo could make no battery; but having behaved himſelf honourably, he retreated to *Callis*. Alſo the Marqueſſe of *Dorſet* deſtroyed by fire and Sword an innumerable company of Villages and Forts in *Scotland*, but could not come to joyn Battell with them. *Sands* ſallied out of *Callis*, and skirmiſhing with the Enemy, after he had turned many of their Caſtles, he came back to the City.

When therefore King *Henry* nnderſtood, that the Duke of *Albany*, who commanded all

Scotland,

Scotland, had a choice Army in *France*, he ſent *William* Sonne to *William* with a Navy, that he ſhould ſet upon him in his coming back again, but when he had ſcouted up and down at Sea in vain, he at laſt ſet his men on Land, and with a handfull of his, he overthrew a great Army of the *French*, and obtained thereby both the Victory and the prey, and burning the Suburbs of *Tri-port*, he returned for *England*.

Henry now thinks ſeriouſly again of a Warre with *France*, and ſends *Suffolk*, and many principall Nobility with a great Army into *France*, who at firſt aſſault overcame *Bell-Caſtle*, and made *William Scevington* the Governour of the Garriſon. In the mean time the Duke of *Burbon*, Conſtable of *France*, revolted to the *Engliſh* King, with ten thouſand *French*, who being ſtrengthened by theſe new Forces, enter upon *Picardy*, and conquers many Towns and Caſtles; but Winter coming on, and ſcarcity of proviſion, and the Souldiers murmuring, not waiting for the ſupply that *Henry* ſent, he was neceſſitated to retreat to *Callis*, yet he had done a great miſchief to the Enemy.

The *Scotch* in the mean while ſuppoſing the *Engliſh* to be over-buſied vvith the *French* Warres, lift up their Heads again, and aſſaulting the Borders of *England*, they winne divers Towns.

But

But the Earl of *Surrey* entring into *Scotland* with ſix thouſand Souldiers, wan divers Forts, and joyning a little Battell with the *Scotch*, he returned Conquerour, not without great loſſe to the enemy, beſides the Caſtle of *Jedworth*, and the Town that he burnt up.

So with uncertain Fortune the buſineſs being acted in thoſe parts, there was a concluſion for a Ceſſation of Armes, that ſo they might have time to treat of Peace.

Francis the firſt, King of *France* at that time was conquered by the Emperour *Charles* the fifth at *Papion*, and was taken Priſoner, which was no ſmall happineſſe for the *Engliſh* affairs, but a ſad loſs for the *French*. Then Peace was ratified between the Emperour and the *French*, and the *Engliſh* agreed with them alſo. But the Emperour and the *French* ſhortly fell to a new Warre.

Peace being confirmed abroad, *England* began to be in an uproar with greater Troubles in Civil Diſſentions; For *Henry* who had lived twenty years peaceably with his Wife *Katharine*, had a ſcruple of Conſcience put upon him, whether he could without inceſt live with his brothers Wife? (for as we ſaid, ſhe was firſt married to his brother *Arthur*) Judges were choſen to end this Queſtion. But Cardinall *Wolſey*, who had not prudently dealt for *Henry*, had all

his

his Authority taken from him, and his Eſtate was Confiſcate. But at laſt other new Dignities being granted to him, his great loſs was ſomewhat repaired. Then a Parliament was called, and he was charged with many faults, and amongſt the reſt, that he was wont to write in his Letters, *I and my King*, and had cauſed the Cardinals Hat to be ſtamped on the Kings Coyn. He was convicted of all theſe things, and deprived of all his Eſtate; which ſhew a wonderfull example of the inconſtancy of all humane affairs, for he that but lately ruled all and the King too, as he pleaſed, made Laws, and ſwaied Courts of Juſtice, rooted out the Nobles at his pleaſure, burdned the Subjects with great Taxes, deprived both Clergy and Laity of their goods, he is now caſt down from his high Pinnacle of Honour, hated by all, and made no way like himſelf. Afterwards when he was ſent for to the Court to anſwer his charge, he died of grief by the way. In the mean time the buſineſs for a Divorce was tranſmitted to *Clement* the Pope of *Rome*, at the ſuit of the Queen *Katharine*. But the Pope fearing to diſpleaſe King *Henry*, who had lately the Title of *Defender of the Faith* given him by *Leo* the tenth, nor did he think it ſafe to provoke the Emperour who ruled in *Italy*, ſpun out the buſineſs with delays by his Legate

Campeius; who at length with a great diſguſt to the *Engliſh*, after many haſtings and procraſtinations, departed from *England*, leaving the buſineſs uneffected. The King in the interim burning with new flames of love, and ſo admitting no delay. *Warham* being dead, created *Thomas Cranmer* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, who ſtood for a Divorce of Queen *Katharine*. The Pope in the mean time gave his Judgement for *Katharine*. But *Henry*, who had now Divorced *Katharine* (by the Authority of many Divines, and of thoſe at *Paris*, who were it is ſuppoſed corrupted by money) married *Anne* of *Boloyne* privately, and being thereupon angry with the Pope, he aboliſhed all his Power over the *Engliſh* Church, making it high Treaſon for any man, to preferre the Popes Authority before the Kings, or ſhould pay Tribute to him, which he had no right unto, and cauſed them to be denied unto him for the future, and made it a penalty for their life; if any man ſhould maintain the Pope to be the ſupream Head. Then he made all the Churches of *England* and *Ireland* take an Oath to him, that they ſhould acknowledge him to be Head of the Church next under Chriſt. The Diſcipline was thus changed, but nothing in the Doctrine, which he confirmed by a Synod called at *London*. For he put to death many of thoſe

thoſe that followed *Luther* and *Swinglius*. So *Henry* behaved himſelfe in the reſt of his life, that had the Popes not been unjuſt againſt him, he would willingly have ſubmitted himſelf under their power. The Pope being offended that he had loſt his Authority, ſending out his Writings or Bull as they called it, he Excommunicated *Henry* King of *England*, but when it was known that it was procured by Queen *Katharine*, it was the leſſe regarded, and ſhe ſhortly after being deprived of friends, loſt her life for her contumacy. In the mean time Sir *Thomas More*, once Chancellour of *England*, and *John Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, who both refuſed to take the Oath of the Kings Supremacy, loſt their Heads. *Henry* now uſing his own Authority, invaded the goods of the Church, and expelled the Monks out of their Monaſteries: Nor was he content with that, but he cut off the Heads of his ſecond Wife *Anne* of *Boloyne*, Daughter to *Thomas Boloyne* Earl of *Wiltſhire*, accuſing her for Inceſt and Adultery, together with the Lord *Rochfort* her Brother, and others that were of the Kings Bed-Chamber.

Then he married *Jane Seymer*, vvho died afterwards in Childe-birth of *Edward* the ſixth of that name, who ſucceeded King. Then he Divoreed from him *Anne* of *Cleve*, newly mar-

ried, and for her ſake he beheaded *Thomas Cromwell*, who made the match, vvho was riſen from a mean eſtate to a vaſt power by the ſucceſs of Fortune. Alſo *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk* had his Head chopt off, being charged of Treaſon, becauſe he had privily married *Margaret* Daughter to the King of *Scots*, and *Henryes* Neece. *Margaret* was firſt detained, then ſhe was ſet free, after that ſhe was married to *Matthew* Earl of *Leven*, King *James* his Grandfather. In the mean time ſeditions aroſe in the North parts of *England*, here and there by reaſon of the change made of Church Ceremonies; ſome were puniſhed for it; ſome were ſent home, and ſome were ſubdued by force of Armes; the troubles vvere happily aſſwaged, yet not without ſome danger: for it was a matter of great concernment to keep all quiet under new cuſtoms.

Henry now married his fifth Wife *Katharine Howard*, but her he beheaded ſhortly after, with the Lord of *Rochfort*, condemning her for Laſciviouſneſſe.

At that time *Henry* had the Title of King of *Ireland*, when as before he was called only Lord of it. In the interim *Arthur Plantagenet*, baſtard to *Edward* the fourth, is accuſed of Treaſon, but when he was proved not guilty, he

he was received into the Kings favour, but *Arthur* took ſo much joy at it, that he died the next night of meer rejoycing.

The *Scotch* now entring the Frontiers of *England*, and ſpoiling them, compell *Henry* to take Arms, who ſent the Duke of *Norfolk* with an Army into *Scotland*, who ruined many Villages and Houſes, and not ſeeing any enemy, he returned to *Barwick*. The *Scot* would not ſuffer this violence to be unrevenged, but muſters an Army ſuddenly, and falls into *England*, but his men being ſcattered and killed, the *Scot* fell into ſuch grief of minde, and then into a Feaver, that he quickly died of it, leaving *Mary Stewart* his Daughter but eight dayes old, Heir of the Kingdom. *Henry* to put an end to ſo great diſſentions, by the union of theſe two Nations, dealt with the captive Lords to Eſpouſe this Inheritrix of *Scotland* to his Son *Edward*, who were ſet at liberty to preſs the buſineſs.

But by the mediation of the Cardinal of S^t^. *Andrews*, this Treaty was made void, the Daughter being married to the Dolphin. *Henry* was enraged at this, and ſent a valiant Army into *Scotland*, and burnt *Leeth*, which pacified his wrath. Then he made Peace with *Charles* the fifth, the Emperour, and he married his ſixth Wife *Katharine*, *Latimers* Widow, who

was brought in danger of her life upon ſuſpition of the change of her Religion, but by her prudence and humility ſhe eſcaped. Now *Henry* by his Covenant with the Emperour proclaims Warre againſt the *French* King, and ſent an Army unto *Callis*, under the command of *John Wallop*, which joyning with the Forces of *Charles*, beſieged the City *Landreice*. But the *French* making ſhew of a Battell, called the Emperour off from the Siege, and when he had brought proviſion into the City, he retreated, having deluded *Charles*. Then *Henry* muſtering a mighty Force ſails himſelf into *France*, and beſieging *Bononia*, won the place.

In the mean time the *Engliſh* Ships vvhich they had taken from the *French*, are filled with proviſion at *London*: but the *Engliſh* had bad ſucceſs in their fight in *Scotland*, and *Henries* men were vanquiſhed, by which Victory, and new Forces they had recruited themſelves with from *France*, the *Scots* grew inſolent and invade *England*: But the *Engliſh* by the good ſucceſs of the Earl of *Hereford*, deſtroyed an innumerable company of Villages in *Scotland*, and returned home Conquerours, though otherwiſe they ſuſtained a mighty loſs by the *Scots*.

The Admirall of *England* with a Fleet did miſchief

miſchief on the Coaſts of *Normandy*, and deſtroyed a multitude of the enemy; but ſhortly after there was a Treaty made between the *French* and the *Engliſh*, and the conditions of agreement were, that the *French* ſhould redeem *Bononia* vvith eight hundred thouſand Crowns.

In the mean time *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, and *Henry* Earl of *Surrey*, his Sonne, are accuſed of Treaſon, becauſe they had engraven ſomething in their Coats of Arms that ſeemed to be peculiar to the King, and though they did defend their Titles very abundantly, yet the Earl loſt his head. But the Duke was kept in priſon till the Reign of Queen *Mary*. *Henry* died about this time, in the year 1547, when he had reigned 38 years, and was 56 years old, and buried at *Windſor*. He was a Prince adorned with all gifts of Nature, and in whom, had he not too much loved his pleaſure, there was no defect. He was a great favourer of Learning.

Edward *the Sixth*, *King of* England France *and* Ireland.

Anno 1547.

Henry dying, left his Sonne *Edward*, born of *Seymer*, by his Will to ſucceed him in the firſt place, and next to him *Mary*, *Katharines* Daughter, and laſt of all *Elizabeth*, which he begat of *Anne* of *Boloyn*. Young *Edward* was Crowned at nine years of age, in the year 1547. Becauſe he was young he had ſixteen Overſeers appointed for him, the chief was the Duke of *Sommerſet*, Brother to *Jane Seymer*, a man of a great integrity. The death of *Henry* being heard of by *Francis* King of *France*, did exceedingly grieve the old man, who being about the ſame age, did preſage his own death to be near. He kept a Funerall ſolemnity for him, as the manner is for Kings, and not long after that, he followed him that was gone before him.

Henry at his death, had commanded his Councill before all things, that they ſhould preſs a Marriage for his Sonne *Edward* with the Queen of *Scotland*. Meſſengers are therefore

fore ſent to treat of conditions, and to obtain their conſent; but when the faction of the Papiſts prevailed for the Dolphin, a great Army was preſently raiſed, and ſent into *Scotland*, under the conduct of the Viceroy *Sommerſet*. The *Scots* alſo came to meet him with a powerfull hand, they joyned Battell at *Muskelburgh*, but they were beaten down and put to flight, the chief of their Nobility being ſlain or taken priſoners. After this Victory many Cities yeilded, and the Nobles fell off from them in greater numbers: But that there might be an end made of this Warre and difference, they ſend the maiden Queen by advice of the Peers, to be Educated and Eſpouſed in *France*. In the mean time there was a great change of the old cuſtoms in the Churches of *England*. Images were caſt out of the Churches, by the Authority of *Sommerſet*, vvho was addicted to the Reformed Religion; The Sacrament was exhibited under both kindes, and the other old Ceremonies were aboliſhed, all that made oppoſition vvere either caſt into priſon, or loſt their places. Upon this grouud a wonderfull ſedition aroſe in divers Countries of *England*, though the Rebels had ſeveral intentions, ſome came to pillage, others under pretence of Religion ſet forward other deſignes; the ſmalleſt number made it any matter of conſcience. There was

was a Proclamation made vvhereby all were pardoned if they would lay down their Arms; but the more mildly they were dealt withall, the more did this mad rabble increaſe. They beſieged *Exceter*, but the Citizens did reſiſt them with wonderfull Valour, enduring great famine and ſcarcity. At length *Gray* coming with an Army, after ſome ſmall Bickerings, raiſed the ſiege. The Rebels recollecting their Forces, began a new fight, but they were put to flight, or taken preſently and hanged. When this ſedition was quelled, another as great roſe in *Norfolk*; for *Robert Ket* a baſe fellow, had drawn twenty thouſand men to his party, who guarded him that he might deliver up ſome complaints to the King. The King, though he diſdained to treat with Rebels, anſwered them that their Petitions ſhould be granted at the next Parliament. They were not content with this, but they laid ſiege to the City of *Norwich*, and wan it. The Earl of *Northampton* went againſt them with a ſmall Army, and vvas worſted by the factious rabble, and the Lord *Sheffield* and others were killed. But being ſtrengthned with new Forces, he went once more againſt them, and holding forth to them the Kings pardon, they threw away their Arms, and left their Colours, returning every man to his place. *Ket* and the reſt of the Ring-leaders

ſuffered

ſuffered for it. Another tumult roſe about the ſame time, which fell of it ſelf, only the Ring-leaders were executed.

The *French* in the mean while breaking their League, proclaimed Warre with *England*; and providing a Fleet vvhen they had aſſaulted *Garnſey*, *Jerſey*, and *Bononia* in vain with an Army, they left off of their own accord. In the mean time the Viceroy of *England* being deceived, beheaded the Admirall his Brother, being circumvented by the feminine fraud of his Wife, and condemned him for nothing that was laid to his charge; upon which occaſion both he and his Authority committed an egregious fault. For they that favoured the Admirall were offended with the Viceroy, and they that did honour him, would truſt him but a little, ſo they all fell from him at once, though upon divers ends. Alſo the Viceroy was taken up with building a ſtately Palace, (which is to this day called *Sommerſet* Houſe.) And he had demoliſhed divers Temples, Towers, and ſacred places, by which injury he had alienated from him not a little the mindes of all men. *Warwick*, vvho was of his own inclination the Viceroy his greateſt enemy, made uſe of this occaſion, and procured ſome Lords to ſtand with him, and they conſpired together againſt the Viceroy, and ſending Meſſengees to the King,

King, who ſojourned at *Windſor*, to certifie him of the good intention of the Lords, they deſired his conſent to caſt the Viceroy into Priſon. But the Viceroy, when he would not, or could not anſwer the crimes objected againſt him, he ſubmitted himſelf to the Kings will and pleaſure, by which humility he obtained pardon, and was received into grace. Alſo the Dukes Daughter (to make the friendſhip laſting by Marriage) was betrothed to *Warwicks* Sonne, and *Warwick* was made Admirall of the Sea.

Then Peace being ratified between the *Engliſh* and the *French*, *Bononia* was delivered up to the *French* King, 400000 Crowns being paid to the *Engliſh*.

The Emperour in the mean time, becauſe the profeſſion of the *Romiſh* Religion was not allowed to his Siſter, denounced Warre againſt *England*, but he was pacified by ſuch an Anſwer as was ſeaſonable to that time.

Alſo there was a Treaty for a Marriage between *Elizabeth* the Kings Siſter, and the King of *Denmarks* Sonne, but *Elizabeth* could not be perſwaded to be married to any man.

A ſpeech there was further concerning a Marriage between *Edward* and the *French* Kings Daughter, which was ratified, and the Dowry agreed upon.

In

In the mean time the Earl of *Northumberland*, that he might bring to paſſe what he intended, endeavours by all means to root out the Duke of *Sommerſet*. But he to prevent his ſnares, came one day into his Chamber armed, and found him naked in his Bed, and whether he were pacified by his falſe or friendly ſhew of Love and Humanity, he ſpared him, and departed doing nothing to him. But afterwards *Sommerſet* vvas accuſed by him for high Treaſon, and loſt his head for it, being a forerunner of the Accuſers deſtiny. *Northumberland*, when as thus farre all things had ſucceeded as he deſired, was reſolved to follow the ſucceſſe, and perſwaded the King at length, that if he would have the Reformed Religion, that was then generally received in *England*, to be confirmed, he ſhould paſs over his Siſter *Mary*, who was ſo ſtrongly addicted to the Church of *Rome*, and ſhould nominate *Joan Gray* for his ſucceſſour, Wife to his Son *Gilford Dudley*, who was next of blood after his Siſters. The King vvho was reſolved by all means to preſerve the Reformed Religion, eaſily yeilded to this, ſome others in vain oppoſing it. The King died ſhortly after of a Conſumption, having Raigned ſix years and five moneths, and buried at *Weſtminſter*; by whoſe death the Duke of *Northumberlund* being now made partaker of his deſire,

took to himſelf the rule of the Kingdom, and commanded his Daughter *Joan* to be publickly proclaimed Queen by King *Edwards* Teſtament.

MARY *Queen of* England, France *and* Ireland.

Anno 1553.

MARY, ſo ſoon as the fame was ſpread of her Brothers death, came with Poſthorſe from *Hoveſdon*, where ſhe then reſided, into *Suffolk*, to whom preſently came divers Lords, who had firſt compacted to preſerve the Reformed Religion. Then ſhe ſent by her Letters to the Senate of *London*, that they ſhould proclaim her for Queen. But the Lords in the Name of all the people made anſwer, that by the Teſtimony of King *Edward*, *Joan* was to ſucceed, and they aſſerted that *Maries* Mother was divorced; whereupon they fly to Arms. The Earl of *Northumberland* with a ſmall Army went againſt *Mary*, but as he proceeded but ſlowly, *Maries* Forces increaſed mightily: Alſo *Edward Haſtings*, who was ſet with four thouſand Souldiers and ſix Ships, to prevent

prevent that *Mary* might no wayes eſcape, revolted to her, by which loſs the *Londoners* and Lords were not a little diſmaid, and grew at odds one with another. The *London* Counſell, when they did not hold faſt together, was commanded openly to proclaim *Mary* Queen, and the ſame was done in all other places. *Northumberland* when he was certain that his companions had fallen from him, that he might not runne the hazzard alone, called a Counſell at *Cambridge*, and he for want of a Herauld proclaimed *Mary* Queen of *England*, caſting his Cap up in token of joy. But that did not at all help his cauſe; for the Earl of *Arundel*, who a little before did not decline to venture his life for *Joan*, coming to *Cambridge*, in *Maries* Name takes the Duke, who in vain intreated for his life, and caſts him into priſon. *Joan* at the command of her Father Duke of *Suffolk*, when the caſe was altered, laid down the Enſignes of the Kingdome with more cheerfulneſſe than ſhe had taken them up.

The Queen coming to *London*, met her Siſter *Elizabeth* with a thouſand Horſe, and *Thomas* of *Norfolk*, *Edward Conteuer*, *Stephen Gardner* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and *Sommerſets* Wife, which ſhe received into grace, giving them her hand to kiſſe. Then entring upon the Church affairs, ſhe aboliſhed thoſe Biſhops and

Ceremo-

Ceremonies that *Edward* had confirmed, setting up others in their room (the people were not a little enraged at it) and then she punished severely all those that were enemies to the Church of *Rome*.

In the interim the Duke of *Northumberland*, the Earls of *Northampton* and *Warwick*, are Endited of high Treason, she spared *Northampton*, but *Northumberland* was beheaded, abjuring the Religion he professed before in hope of pardon. His Body was buried by the Duke of *Summerset* his Capitall enemy, between *Anne* of *Boloyne*, and *Katharine*, who all suffered the same death. The rest persisted and did not renounce the Faith they had professed.

Joan afterwards with her husband *Dudley*, *Ambrose* and *Henry*, sonnes to *Northumberland*, was condemned to lose her Head, but she was reprieved for a time.

Then the Marriage was contracted between the Queen, and *Philip* Sonne to *Charles* the fifth, who was afterwards King of *Spain*, which matter was very ill liked by some, who did foresee from hence a dangerous consequence to the Kingdome of *England*: Amongst whom was *Thomas Wiat*, who took up Arms to rebell by the advice of *Suffolke*, Father to *Joan Grey*, drawing some of the Nobility to side with him.

Also

Alſo *Brèt* who was ſent againſt him with five thouſand men, revolted to him, by which ſucceſs he grew more bold, and marched toward *London*, and put the Citizens into great fear, ſo that the Lawyers pleaded in their Armour.

In the mean while the Earl of *Suffolk* had an Army raiſed in the County of *Warwick*, but the Earl of *Huntington* was ſent out againſt him, who terrified the feeble Duke, that he was forced to flie in haſte, and to ſhelter himſelf in Woods and by places. At laſt he was diſcovered by his Hoſt, and ſent with a ſtrong guard to *London*, and caſt into priſon. *Wiat* in the mean time coming to *London*, vvas ſhut out of the City, but he paſſed over the *Thames* at *Kingſton*, and provided to offer violence to the Citizens. After ſome light skirmiſhing with the Queens Forces, he was overborn by the power of his Enemy, and when he had yeilded, he was ſent to priſon, his Souldiers being ſcattered or taken. The Queen being enraged with that boldneſſe of the Subjects, began ſeriouſly to conſider how to puniſh the guilty; *Gilford* Husband to *Joan* was firſt beheaded, then *Joan* her ſelf, within the Walls of the Tower of *London*, vvith a wonderfull Courage, Piety and Conſtancy, had her Head chopt

off. She was a Princeſſe for her Learning and Wiſdome, worthy of immortal praiſe. It is reported alſo that *Morgan*, who had given ſentence of death againſt *Joan*, fell into madneſſe ſhortly after her Death, and died mad, alwayes crying out, *That they ſhould take* Joan Grey *away from him.* Then *Suffolk* was beheaded, and the ſame day *Wiat*, the cauſe of all theſe miſchiefs (for *Joan* had been pardoned, had not he with a furious Tumult enraged the Queen.) Thoſe that followed him, ſome were puniſhed in other places, and at ſeverall times, amongſt vvhom was *Thomas Grey*, and ſome were pardoned. Alſo *Elizabeth* vvas caſt into Priſon by the malice of *Gardner* Biſhop of *Winchester.* Without doubt her Life was at ſtake, had ſhe not wiſely anſwered Queſtions propounded to her concerning her Faith; They did ſeverely at that time puniſh all thoſe that were Enemies to the Religion of the Church of *Rome*, amongſt whom vvas *Cranmer* Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, *Nicholas Ridley* Biſhop of *London*, and *Hugh Latimer* Biſhop of *Worceſter*, theſe refuſing to abjure their Faith, were burnt to aſhes.

The Queens Marriage with *Philip* was now ſolemnized, and Cardinal *Pool* being ſent from the

the Pope, all the Errours of the *English* are purged, as it were, and all confeſſing their ſinnes are received under the Popes Tuition.

The fame was at this time, that the Queen was with Childe, ſhe was ſo glad of it, that ſhe commanded to let looſe many who were priſoners in the Tower; Amongſt which were the ſons of the Duke of *Northumberland*, who were before condemned to loſe their Heads. But all this hope vaniſhed, when the Queens Conception proved to be but a Tympany.

That there might not lack Examples of Piety, the Queen reſtored to the Church all the Goods ſhe poſſeſſed belonging to the Church, and when ſhe was told, That by ſo great bounty the Crown-Lands would be much waſted: She anſwered piouſly and prudently, That ſhe preferred her ſouls health before all the worlds good.

Philip in the *interim* went to *Bruſſels* to his Father *Charles*, and obtain'd from him the Kingdom of *Spain*, and his other Dominions before his Death, then he returned for *England*; Then again he went to *Callis*, to wage Warre with the *Frenchman*, and he ſtaid upon that buſineſs above eighteen Moneths, the *Engliſh* murmuring, and the Queen lamenting for his abſence.

Thomas Stafford at that time was inſtigated by the *French* to make Warre againſt the Queen, and landing in *England* with an Army, he wan the Caſtle of *York*, but he was ſoon conquer'd, and taken by the Earl of *Weſtmerland*, he was then beheaded at *London*; and his followers were hanged.

The Queen, though it were againſt the Articles agreed upon, put her finger in to aſſiſt her Husband, and ſent an Army, under the Command of *Pembroke*, to aſſiſt him to beleaguer St. *Quintins*. The *French* attempting to relieve the place with victuals, were forced to fight, and they were beaten, and the chief of their Nobility were taken, amongſt whom were the Dukes *Momorancy*, *Mompenſier* and *Longovill*, *John Borbon* Duke of *Anion* was killed, whereupon the City yeelded. This Victory was imputed chiefly to the *Engliſh*, but it was recompenſed with a greater loſs, for *Calis* having more Forces drawn out of it, then could be ſpared, was aſſaulted by the Duke of *Guiſe*, who would not let ſuch an opportunity ſlip, and being repulſed, he came valiantly on again, ſo long, untill it was forced to yeeld, after this City had been in the hands of the *Engliſh* two hundred years; *Guyna* followed this, though it were gallantly maintain'd by the beſieged, and ſo the *Engliſh* were thruſt forth

of

of all *France*. The Queen was vvonderfull grieved for the loſs of *Callis*, ſhe ſent a great Fleet, and burnt ſome Villages, but had ſmall comfort for her great loſs. Peace then was confirmed between both Crowns, but *Mary* fought not for it, who took ſuch griefe of mind for the loſs of *Callis*, and was ſo weak of body by reaſon of her Dropſie, that ſhe ended her dayes, in the year of our Lord, 1558. the fifth year of her Raign, and the three and fortieth year of her Life.

ELIZABETH, *Queen of* England France *and* Ireland.

Anno 1508.

ELIZABETH Daughter to *Henry* the eighth by *Anne* of *Bullen*, ſucceeded her Siſter *Mary*, being raiſed to the Throne from the Priſon; By her Coronation the Papal Authority fell again the ſecond time. All the Ceremonies *Mary* had brought in, ſhe aboliſhed, and reformed all according to the Rule of her Brother *Edward*.

Being ſhe was of a flouriſhing age, and had a moſt flouriſhing Kingdome, it could not be but ſhe ſhould be ſought unto by many Lovers, that were at emulation for her. For at once *Maximilian* the Emperour, the Kings of *Spain* and *Sweden*, the Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, and the Duke of *Angiers*, ſent to wooe her, but they were all put by; Firſt, becauſe the Queen would not marry, for at her Inauguration, the Condition was, That ſhe ſhould marry no ſtranger; whereby there was hopes left to the Natives for ſo great a Match.

The *French* and *Scotch* they hoped to prevail much

much by reaſon of her tender years, being alſo ſhe was a woman, whereupon they invade and ſpoil the *Engliſh* Frontiers, for *Mary Stuart* Daughter of *James* the fifth, had married to *Francis* the ſecond, King of *France*, and the *French* King pleaded his Right thereupon to the Crown of *England*, becauſe his Wife was allied to *Henry* the ſeventh, and *Elizabeth* was born by a ſecond venter; *Henry* the eighth his firſt Wife being alive, and ſo was accounted as a baſtard by her Enemies. But *Elizabeth* to win the Love of her Neighbours, lent help to the Subjects of *Scotland*, who by the malice of the *Guiſians* were extreamly afflicted, and the buſineſs was drawn to this head, that Peace was ratified between *Elizabeth*, the *Scotch*, and the *French*, and all the *Roman* Catholicks that neſtled in *Scotland* were commanded to be gone, and the *Engliſh* Colours that the *Frenchman* had taken up wrongfully, were wreſted from him. *Mary* when *Francis* was dead, returned for *Scotland*, and made a firm Agreement with *Elizabeth*, untill ſuch time as Envy and Ambition growing up, the Agreement was violated by the ruine of one of them, and their Siſter-like Concord was diſſolved. For *Mary* her ſecond Husband ſhe was married to, was *Henry Darley*, Kinſman to the *Stuarts*, and one that was the moſt beautifull amongſt Princes, who being

afterwards ſlain, as 'tis ſuppoſed, by Feminine fraud, ſhe fell into the hatred of all her Subjects, and when after that in ſpite of the Nobility ſhe made *Bothwell* partaker of her bed, and for his cauſe made Warre upon her Subjects, ſhe fell into all miſery, and being captivated, ſhe was kept ſo a long time, but at length ſhe made her eſcape, and fled into *England* to *Elizabeth*, who received this miſerable woman in her Arms. She was at firſt liberally entertained, but after, when ſhe began to move Diſſention in *England*, where ſhe was entertained, being a moſt bitter enemy to thoſe of the Reformed Religion, ſhe was kept more narrowly. For eighteen years ſhe was held in priſon, ſometimes with more, ſometimes leſs liberty, untill ſuch time as ſhe grew fierce by reaſon of her Captivity, and to riot in hopes of the Kingdom, laying ſnares for the Queens Life, for that cauſe, at the requeſt of the ſeverall Orders of *England*, ſhe was beheaded. Alſo the Duke of *Suffolk*, who had ſecretly gone about to obtain *Mary* for his Wife, was put to the ſame death before her. *Elizabeth* in the mean while ſent aſſiſtance to thoſe of the reformed Religion in *France* that were in trouble, and for a pledge the ſtrongeſt City in *France*, *Haver de Grace*, was delivered up to her; but when ſhe refuſed to quit it again, the *French* King laid ſiege to it, and wan it from her.

At

At that time a ſharp Diſſention ſprang up between *Philip* the ſecond, and the *Low-Countreys*, which grew to a Warre; and *Elizabeth* led by the affinity of the Religion, and the nearneſs of thoſe Countreys, aſſiſted the United Provinces with Men and Money. For *Leiceſter* was ſent with Forces into *Holland*, but when he exceeded his Commiſſion, and arrogated too much power to himſelf, and by fraud attempted to make himſelf Maſter of the principal Towns, he loſt the States good-will, and returned without honour into *England*. The Queen for this aſſiſtance was hated by the *Spaniard*, who had privately before laid ſnares for her life, but now he breaks forth into open Warre. For he raiſd a mighty Fleet both in *Spain*, and in the *Low-Countries*, it being the beſt Navy for proviſion of Men and Munition that ever the Ocean bare, and carried the preſumptuous Title of *Invincible*, it conſiſted of one hundred and thirty Ships, in which were nineteen thouſand two hundred and ninety Souldiers, eight thouſand three and fifty Marriners, two thouſand and eighty Gally-ſlaves; two thouſand ſix hundred and thirty great Ordinance; and the 19 of *July* 1588, they came within ſight of *England*, and was in hopes to devour it. But by the valour of the *Engliſh* and the *Dutch*, the Fleet was partly hindred, partly worſted, but eſpecially

cially by a Tempeſt that roſe againſt it, the *Spaniard* was diſappointed of his hopes. From that time they break forth on both ſides into a fiery Warre, eſpecially by Sea, and in the *Weſt-Indies* and *Portugall*, the *Engliſh* did miſchief to the *Spaniard*, and received the like.

The Queen, when theſe Clouds of a Tempeſt at hand were diſperſed, cauſed a publick Thankſgiving to be made unto God, who had delivered her, and in Triumphant manner ſhe rid through *London*.

She was not for all this free from Troubles, but by the Queens Wiſdom and maſculine Valour, they were even ſtrangled in the Birth; and *England* was made the receptacle of perſecuted and afflicted men, who fled by companies out of *France* and *Holland* by reaſon of the Wars there.

In the mean while Sir *Francis Drake* was ſent toward *Hiſpaniola*, who made the *Spaniard* work enough in thoſe parts, taking *Cape Verde*, waſting *Hiſpaniola*, and he skirmiſhed in divers ſmall fights, with the *Spaniſh* Forces. But when there was no occaſion for a fight on the continent, he returned home with the ſpoil and honour. The next year alſo, the ſaid Sir *Francis Drake*, burnt and took ſix and thirty *Spaniſh* Ships laden with great riches that lay in the

the Haven at *Callis*, and brought them for *England*.

With the ſame ſucceſſe almoſt the Earle of *Eſſex*, with a vaſt Fleet of *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, waſted the Coaſts of *Spain*, and landing his men wan *Cades*, and plundering the City, and burning thirty Ships that rode in the Harbour, he came back for *England* laden with the ſpoil. After that the *Engliſh* Fleet, watching the *Spaniſh* Navy that came fraught with rich Merchandize that came from the *Weſt-Indies*, was diſappointed by their flying into the Iſle *Tercera*.

France being involv'd in troubles, the Queen was pleaſed to aſſiſt the King of *France* with men and money.

The King of *France* having reduced his Subjects to their Obedience, endeavours to mediate a Peace betwixt the *Spaniards* and the Queen, the Queen to ſatisfie the *French* Kings deſires, ſent an Embaſſadour into *France* to conſult about it; But the States of *Holland* ſent Embaſſadours to Queen *Elizabeth* to dehort her from the Peace.

In the year 1598, *Philip* King of *Spain* died, in the ſeventieth year of his age: he aimed at great matters, but was unfortunate in moſt of them, whereupon it came to paſſe, that the three Keys of the *Spaniſh* Empire (which his Father

Father ſo called, and willed him above all things to keep diligently) to wit, 1. *Gulet* in *Africa*, *Fluſhing* in *Holland*, and *Cadez* in *Spain*, were neglected; The firſt taken in by the *Turks*, the ſecond by the Confederates of the United Provinces, the third much impaired in its ſtrength, and impoveriſhed by the *Engliſh*; which his Father fore-ſeeing in his life-time, admoniſhed to make Peace with the *Engliſh*, and the United Provinces.

Anno 1599. died that Reverend and famous Divine Mr *Richard Hooker*, a man moderate, temperate, meek and vertuous, even to the beſt imitation, and left behind him a living monument of his reall worth, his Book entituled, *Eccleſiaſticall Policy*.

Then Peace was confirmed between the *Spaniard* and the *French*, but the *Engliſh*, and the United Provinces refuſed to be comprehended in it, becauſe they held it diſadvantagious to their Buſineſſe. But making a Covenant, with joynt Forces they invade *Spain*. The *Spaniard* ſtirs up the Earl of *Tyrone*, who made a great rebellion in *Ireland*. *Eſſex* was ſent thither to ſubdue the Rebels, and to make them conformable, but he ſcurvily neglected an opportunity of conquering the Enemy, and beyond his Commiſſion treats with the Rebels concerning Peace. He was therefore called home, and com-

commanded to anſwer for his fault, by his ſubmiſſion he found the Queens favour. Afterward prompted on, either by ſhame, or his ambition of the Kingdom, he raiſed an Army, and entred *London*, and when he purpoſed to have forced the Queen, his Forces ran away from him, and he was taken priſoner, accuſed of High-Treaſon, and loſt his Head for it.

Charles Blunt was ſent in his place, who in divers fights wonderfully ſubdued the Forces of the Rebels, though the *Spaniard* had ſent many ſupplies to relieve them; In a ſet-Battel he overthrew *Tyrone*, and the *Auxiliary Spaniards*, and then made Conditions, driving them out of *Ireland*. *Tyrone* afterwards when he had tried all wayes, ſubmitted, and humbly intreated the Queens Pardon. In the mean time *Richard Leviſon* and *William Monſon*, with eight great Ships, and ſome ſmall ones, went and ſpoiled the *Spaniſh* Coaſts, and meeting the *Spaniards* Fleet coming from *America* with abundance of wealth, he ſet upon them, but was too weak for them, for he was diſappointed. After that he maſtered a very great rich Ship riding at Anchor in *Portugal*, and burning ſome leſſer Ships, he returned for *England* with her.

At that time the Seminaries of the Church of *Rome*, and chiefly the Jeſuites were baniſhed out of *England*, becauſe they cauſed troubles, and could not live quietly.

At last the Queen being feeble with age and hot disease, she died in the year 1602. and was buried at *Westminster*. She departed a very good Christian, having named King *James* of *Scotland* Sonne to *Mary Stuart* to be her Successour, when she had raigned fourty four years and four moneths. A Queen that was most endowed with all the Benefits of Nature, a comely Person, for her Body, but more comely in her Soul, she was an excellent Scholar, to be commended for her Goodnesse and Justice; She was a Mother to her Subjects, and a Subject to the Laws.

JAMES, *King of* Great-Brittany, France *and* Ireland.

Anno 1602.

THe loſs that *England* ſuſtained by the death of *Elizabeth*, was abundantly recompenſed by her Succeſſour King *James*, and the union of the two Kingdoms *England* and *Scotland*. He was inferiour to her, neither for Religion, nor any thing elſe, and by new rejoycings he extinguiſhed that grief the Subjects had conceived. He was a King the more happy, becauſe he obtain'd a Kingdom by lawfull ſucceſſion, that was no wayes embroyled with Warres and Tumults, but ſetled in exceeding great Peace. But as in the calmeſt weather ofttimes clouds riſe ſuddenly, and it fals to thundering and lightning, ſo the affairs of *Brittany*, though moſt peaceably, were endangered by the malice and conſpiracy of ſome. The Ring-leaders were *Henry Cobham* and *George* his Brother, *Thomas Gray* of *Wiltſhire*, *Walter Raleigh*, and others. Their purpoſe was *to kill the King but newly crowned, to change Religion, to raiſe Tumults, to let in Forraimers* : A terrible deſign. But this

this flame vaniſhed into ſmoke, the principall being either put to death, or condemned to perpetual impriſonment, or having their pardons granted to them. But leaſt Peace ſhould be diſturbed by new Warres, he made Peace with the King of *Spain*, who was a ſworn Enemy to the *Engliſh* Nation, it was ſolemnly confirmed on both ſides.

Though Peace were ſetled abroad, yet there was occaſion for new Troubles at home; for when the King had called a Parliament, a very horrible Conſpiracy was detected, the chief Author of it was one *Catesby* a *Roman Catholick*; He having hamper'd ſome other men in the ſame buſineſs, endeavoured at one ſtroke to root out all the *Engliſh* Nation, as it were by Lightning from Heaven. For hiring a Cellar under the Parliament-Houſe, he laid in a vaſt deal of Gun-powder, which he purpoſed to ſet fire to, and ſo to blow up at once all the Parliament-Houſe, together with the King, the Prince, and all the Nobility; but the matter was diſcovered by the importunate care of the Conſpirators, who gave warning of the danger to the Lord *Mounteagle*, Sonne to the Lord *Morley*, a Member of the Parliament, and one that they loved very well. In this Vault there were found terrible Inſtruments of this damned wickedneſs, that a man would wonder at, which were preſently

ſently taken away. Then the Conſpirators were executed, *Catesby* with his companions, *John* and *Chriſtopher Wright*; and *Thomas Peirce* flying to his arms was killed with a ſhot, others were taken and executed: Amongſt whom was *Everard Digby*, who was unwillingly drawn into this Conſpiracy, for otherwiſe he was a man of excellent parts. And thus that hainous wickedneſs that had troubled the devils themſelves, was purged away.

In *Northampton* and *Warwickshire* new tumults aroſe, firſt by *Fines*, then by *John Reignold*, that led them, but this faction was ſoone allayed, and the Authors were puniſhed.

In the mean time *Frederick* Count Elector *Palatine*, came to *London* to marry *Elizabeth* King *James* his Daughter. The Marriage was ſolemnized with wonderfull pomp; but all theſe Joyes were overſhadowed with clouds of ſorrow, for on the ſixth day of *November* 1612, Prince *Henry* departed this life. Various reports were ſpread abroad by the vulgar, as if indirect means had been uſed, but his Phyſitians gave it under their hands, that he died of a violent, malignant Feaver. *Charles* the Kings ſecond Son ſucceeds him in the Principality of *Wales*.

About this time that Gallant and Noble Spirit Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, after fourteen years impriſonment, made addreſſes to the King to get leave to viſit the New-found-world in *America*,

to which he gave him liberty, and a Commiſſion under the great Seal to ſet forth Ships and Men for that ſervice; his Reputation and merit cauſed many Gentlemen of quality to venture their Eſtates and Perſons on the Deſign: Many conſiderable adventures were performed, though with great difficulty, but more eſpecially that of the taking and burning St *Thomes*. Information being ſent to *Gondimer* who was Embaſſadour here in *England*, never reſted aſſaulting the King with importunity for reparation. *Rawleigh* no ſooner comes aſhore at *Plimouth*, but he had ſecret information, and did endeavour to get from thence in a bark for *Rochel*, but being apprehended by Sir *Lewis Stuckly*, he is brought to *London*, and committed to the Tower. *Gondimer* that looked upon him as a man that had not only high abilities, but animoſity to do his Maſter miſcheif, being one of thoſe ſcourges that Queen *Elizabeth* had made uſe of to afflict the *Spaniards*. Having now gotten him in the Trap he layd his Baits about the King: In *October* he was brought to the Kings Bench-barre at *Weſtminſter*, before the Lord Cheif-Juſtice, where the Records of his arraignment at *Wincheſter* were opened, and he demanded why the Judgement ſhould not be put in execution; *Rawleigh* replied, that Judgement was void by the Kings Commiſſion for his late expedition; The Lord Cheif-Juſtice replied, the opinion

nion of the Court was to the contrary: He required time to prepare for death, but it was answered the appointed time was the next-morning. Accordingly on the morrow he loſt his Head on a ſcaffold in the Palace-yard.

The Earl of *Buckingham*, as great in Title as favour, was now grown a Marqueſſe, and lying in the Kings boſome every man paid tribute to his ſmile; *Worceſter* and *Nottingham* are taken off, for him to be Maſter of the Horſe, and Admirall of *England*.

Queen *Anne* about that time fell ſick and died. She was a Queen to be had in everlaſting memory for her Noble vertues. The King alſo fell ſick, but by Gods aſſiſtance he recovered.

The Palſegrave in the mean time, who had married *Elizabeth*; by the prompting forward of ſome of the *German* Princes, was choſen King of *Bohemia*. The Emperor was wonderfully enraged at this Election, and proclaimed War againſt him, driving him firſt out of *Bohemia*, and afterwards out of all *Germany*, who in *Holland*, the common refuge for all wretched people, found a bountifull and ſafe entertainment. But *James*, that he might help his ſonne in Law, made a motion for a Marriage of his ſonne *Charles*, and the *Spaniards* Daughter.

Charles is ſent into *Spain* through *France* by Land, where he ſaw upon his Journey, *Mary* Daughter to *Henry* the fourth. He was received

in *Spain*, in outward appearance, magnificently, but a diſſention ariſing between the Duke of *Buckingham* and Count *Olivares*, the principall Don of the *Spaniſh* Court, the Treaty for the Marriage was drawn out at length, but *Charles* being impatient of delayes, was called home again by his Father, and arrived ſafe in *England*, and afterwards he married *Mary*, whom he had affectionately beheld in *France*.

What remains to be ſpoken of King *James*, is either ſcarce worth recording, or not ſo conſonant to the truth. He died at laſt of a diſeaſe of the Spleen, though there were falſe reports ſpread abroad that he was poyſoned, when he had reigned twenty two years, and was fifty nine years of age, in the year 1625. He was a true *Platonick* Prince, a Husband worthy of his wife, an Honeſt Father to his Children, a good King to his Subjects; becauſe he was a Prince he was the Moſt Learned, and he was the Beſt Prince by reaſon of his Learning.

When this King reigned, the *Engliſh* Plantations were ſetled in the *Indies*, as in *Virginia*, which Country Sir *Walter Rawleigh* firſt diſcovered; and in the *Barmudoes*, whither an infinite multitude of Inhabitants preſently reſorted, building publick and private houſes, and made a Common-wealth. The ſame was done by others in *New-England*, to the great comfort of ſuch as were diſtreſſed and fled thither.

CHARLES

CHARLES *the First, King of* Great-Brittany, France *and* Ireland.

Anno 1625.

CHARLES the ſecond Son of King *James*, was borne at *Dumferling* in *Scotland* the 19 of *November* 1600. who during his Infancy was of a very weak and ſickly temper, but arriving to riper yeares, proved to be of a very healthfull Conſtitution. Whilſt he abode in *Scotland* was created Duke of *Albany*, Marqueſſe of *Ormond*, Count *Roſs*, and Lord of *Ardmannoth*, and was the ſixt of *January* 1604. in preſence of all the Lords of the Privy Councell, and other Peeres of the Realme, at *Weſtminſter* Created Duke of *Yorke*, with all uſuall and accuſtomed ſolemnities.

Count *Gundamore* being ſent over Ambaſſadour from the King of *Spaine*, to treate of a Match betwixt the young Prince and the *Infanta* of *Spaine*, who confidently affirmed, there was no other way to regaine the *Palatinate*, and to ſettle a perpetual Peace in *England*, but by this Match. King *James* having a natural inclination to peace, gives great attention, and by advice of the Privy

Councell, the Prince on the 17 of *Feb.* 1622. is ſent diſguiſed with the Duke of *Buckingham*, attended by *Endimion Porter*, of the Bed-Chamber, and *Richard Greenham*, Maſter of the Horſe to the Duke, who were met at *Dover* by Sir *Francis Cottington*, Secretary to the Prince, who being Imbarqued, Land at *Boloigne*, and ſo poſt to *Paris*, where ſtaying one day, he had a tranſient View of that excellent Lady the Princes *Heneretta Maria*, at a Mask, *which The Great Diſpoſer of all things had preſerved for him.* On the 7th of *March* he arrives at *Madrid*, and alighted at the Earle of *Briſtolls* houſe, then extraordinary Ambaſſadour, whoſe ſuddaine arrivall ſtartled *Briſtoll*, who was altogether a ſtranger to the Journey. The next Morning notice was given to Count *Olivares*, the *Spaniſh* favourite (and by him Communicated to King *Philip*) of the arrivall of the Duke of *Buckingham*, who in private informed the King of the Princes hazardous adventure to have a ſight of the *Infanta*, which accordingly was afterwards performed with a great deale of ſeeming affection. But the crafty *Spaniard* could by no means be drawne to admit the reſtitution of the *Palatinate*, but would reſerve it as a Gratuity to be freely beſtowed after the Marriage. Much time was ſpent and Articles were drawn on both ſides ready to ſigne, when on the ſuddaine Pope *Gregory*

gory dies, who was to give his diſpenſation for the Match; application is made to Pope *Urban*, which protracted much time: the Prince being ſenſible of delay, deſires leave to returne, and with many Compliments takes his farewell of the King and *Infanta*, and with much danger arrives the fift of *October* at *Porchmouth*, the next day poſts to *London*, where he was received with unſpeakable joy of the people, and ſoone after haſts to *Royſton*, where the King then reſided; to whom he gave an ample and large account of the whole proceedings: the King communicates it to the Councell, who concluded to acquaint a Parliament with it, and forthwith a Parliament was ſummoned to meet in *February* following. Which being met, he declared *the neceſſity of a mutuall compliance betwixt a King and his Parliament; urging it with the parallel of Chriſt and his Church, the husband & the wife; and ſo falls upon the buſineſſe, giving a ſhort account of his Sons going to* Spaine, *with* Buckingham *to attend him, and his endeavours therein for the peace and welfare of* Chriſtendom, *and deſires their advice and aſſiſtance for the good of the Common-wealth, Religion, his Son, his Children of the* Palatinate, *how that his Eſtate and welfare conſiſted with theirs, and that he was free to follow their advice; and concluded with ſerious and Chriſtian Proteſtations, that never wayfaring man in the burning deſarts more*

desired water to quench his thirst, then he thirsted and longed for the happy successe of this Parliament.

The House after debate desired a further account of the particulars, which accordingly was performed by the Duke of *Buckingham* and the Prince. *Buckingham* having satisfied the curiosity of a searching Parliament, was by them greatly esteemed and looked upon as the preserver of the Nation. The Parliament after mature Consideration, advise the King to break off the Treaty, and to proclaim open warre; the King being naturally of a peacefull dispostion, was very timorous of it, and urges his great *want of money to maintaine it, the Exchequer being much drained by his Sons Journey into* Spaine, *Ambassadours, the maintenance of his Children abroad, who eate no other bread but by him; besides, he was loath to shew his Teeth, and could not bite; he is willing to dissolve the Treaties, but if he should begin a warre, God onely knows when it will end, but he would ingage his Son for the Recovery of the* Palatinate, *and in his old age will, if need require, assist in person, promising the dispossall of the moneys to a Committee of Parliament.*

Forthwith a Councell of War is chosen, who order 6000 men to be sent immediately into the *Low Countryes*, in order to their passage into *Germany*.

Buck-

Buckingham is accuſed of treaſon by the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour, but nothing came of it. The Prince growing in yeares, and in the favour of the people, the Treaty with *Spaine* being null'd, ſome overtures are made for a Match with the Princes *Henneretta Maria*, the youngeſt ſiſter of the *French* King; King *James* breaks it to his Privy Councell, which joyntly applaud it, a Parliament being ſummoned, and the buſineſſe propounded, it was entertained by them with a unanimous conſent, and propoſed that an Ambaſſadour be forthwith ſent to negotiate in behalfe of the Match; the Earle of *Holland* is with all Expedition ſent to feele the pulſe of the *French* King, in whom he found a ready inclination, ſo that he could eaſily gueſſe at the event; having advertiſed his Majeſty of it, inſtantly the Earle of *Carlile* is ſent as an additionall Ambaſſadour to the Earle of *Holland*; the *French* King ſends Marqueſſe *D'Effait* for *England* in the quality of an Ambaſſadour; the Noble Inſtruments plyed their buſineſſe ſo cloſe, that on the tenth of *November* 1624. Articles on both ſides were ſigned, & there wanted nothing for the Compleating the Match, but a diſpenſation from *Rome*, for which the King of *France* ſollicited.

In the Interim King *James* being moleſted with a tertian Ague, which drave him into a Feaver, delivers up his ſoule to God the 27 of *March* 1625.

1625. at *Theobalds*, leaving his three Kingdomes to his Son. Various rumours paſt among the people concerning a plaiſter which the Duke of *Buckingham* cauſed to be laid to the Kings wriſts; but his Phyſitians, Sir *Matthew Liſter*, Dr *Chambers*, and others, being examined, cleared the Duke of that ſcandall.

He was accounted and called *Great Britaines Solomon*, by ſome Courtiers; a Generall Scholler, and made all his Studies and Learning ſubſervient to that of Divinity. He was a perfect hater of *Arminianiſme*, the *Semipelagians*, and of the Calviniſticall Presbyterian humour, which ſeverall times attempted to break forth in his Raigne, but he by his wiſdome ſuppreſt; an excellent Oratour, and by ſome charg'd with Epicuriſme: A man ſtudious of peace.

The ſad Newes of King *James* his death came to *Whitehall* juſt when Biſhop *Laud* was in his Sermon, which made him to breake off in compliance with the ſadneſſe of the Congregation. His Son *Charles* was immediately proclaimed at the Court Gate, *King of Great Britaine, France, and Ireland*, who preſently diſpatcheth aviſo's of his Fathers death to all Confederate Princes and States: Next he took care for the ſolemne Interring of the Royall Corps, which on the 14 of *May* was performed with all funerall Rites; his Statue was lively preſented on a magnificent Hearſe,

Hearſe, King *Charles* being preſent thereat. His funerall Sermon was preached by Dr *Williams* Lord Keeper and Biſhop of *Lincolne*.

King *James* (by his death) had intailed a war and an empty Exchequer upon his Succeſſour, which in all humane probability was the occaſion of the great differences and vaſt breaches betwixt him and the people. The King, though much poſſeſt with griefe, yet there remained ſome part for love, he had ſtill an eye toward *France*, and to manifeſt it, he ſent out Letters of procuration to the Duke *Chevereux* to Eſpouſe the Lady *Heneretta Maria*, which Eſpouſalls were ſolemnly performed in the Church of *Noſtredam* in *Paris*. The Bride prepares for *England*: the Duke of *Buckingham* and the Earle of *Montgomery*, with divers other Gentlemen of quality, were ſent to attend her: At *Bulloigne* ſhe was attended with one and twenty Ships, and divers Ladies of Honour, and on Sunday the 12 of *June* 1625. ſhe landed at *Dover*; the King then lay at *Canterbury*, and the next day met her at *Dover*, whence with all ſolemnity ſhe was conducted to *Somerſet*-Houſe in *London*, where a Chappel was prepared for her devotion, with a Covent adjoyning of Capuchin Fryers, according to the Articles of Marriage. *London* at that time was much viſited with the contagion, which broke out under the ſame roof that it formerly did at King *James* his Initia-

Initiation into the Government; and that which is more remarkable, on the ſame day.

The King was not altogether Rapt up with the enjoyment of his deare Conſort, but he was mindfull of the affaires of State; ſummons a Parliament, which being met, he ſpeaks to this purpoſe.

My Lords and Gentlemen;

You are not ignorant that at your earneſt Intreaty, March 23d 1623. *my Father of happy memory firſt took up Arms for the recovery of the* Palatinate, *for which purpoſe by your aſſiſtance he began to forme a conſiderable Army, and to prepare a Goodly Armado and Royall Navy, but death intervening between him and the atchievement, the war with the Crowne is divolved upon me, to the proſecution whereof I am obliged both in nature and Honour: ſo I queſtion not but the ſame neceſſity continuing, you'le cheriſh the Action with the like affection, and further it with a ready contribution.*

True it is, you furniſhed my father with affectionate ſupplyes, but they hold no ſimmetry & proportiõ with the Charge of ſo great an enterprize; for thoſe your donatives are all diſburſt to a penny, and I am inforc't to ſummon you hither, to tell you that neither can the Army advance, nor the Fleete ſet forth without further ayd. Conſider I pray you, the eyes of all Europe *are defixt upon me, to whom I ſhall appeare ridiculous, as though I were unable to out-goe*

Muſter

Muſter and Oſtentation, if you now deſert me. Conſider, it is my firſt attempt, wherein if I ſuſtaine a foyle, it will blemiſh all my future Honour.

If mine cannot, let your own reputation move you, deliver and expedite me fairely out of this warre, wherewith you have encumbred (let it never be ſaid, wherein you have betraid) me. I deſire therefore your ſpeedy ſupply; ſpeedy I call it, for elſe it will prove no ſupply: the Sunne you know is entring into his declining point, ſo it will be ſoone too late to ſet forth, when it ſhall be rather too ſoone to returne. Againe, I muſt mind you of the mortality now Regnant in the City, which ſhould it (as ſo it may, and no breach of priviledge neither) arreſt any one member of either Houſe, it would ſoone put a period both to conſultation and ſeſſion, ſo that your own periclitation neceſſitates an early reſolution.

In ſumme, three of the beſt Rhetoricians, Honour, Oportunity, and Safety, are all of a plot, and plead you ſee for expedition. Perhaps it may be expected I ſhould ſay ſomething in way of account of my Religion, as alſo of the temper and tenure of my future Government; but as I hope I have not been guilty of any thing which may juſtly ſtart the leaſt queſtion in either; ſo I deſire you will repoſe in this aſſurance, that I will in neither vary from thoſe principles wherein I have been Inſtituted at the feete of that eminent Gamaliel *my late Father.*

Which being ended he valed his Crowne.

This

This Speech I ſet downe at large, it being the firſt, and I think not Inferiour to any for Rhetorick.

Though this Speech conſiſted of very preſſing Arguments, yet the Parliament made but ſlow haſt; for they had two Petitions, one for *Religion*, the other for *Grievances*: which were *preſented* to King *James* the *laſt Seſſion*, but received no *anſwer*: which Petitions were preſented to the King with this pretence, that he might have time to conſider and give a deliberate anſwer. To the Petition for *Religion*, his Majeſty promiſed very faire: but to the Petition for *Grievances*, his Majeſty gave very many ſatisfactory Anſwers; he cauſed the Accounts of the ſeverall disburſments relating to the Army and Navy, to be delivered in to the Parliament, which wrought ſuch good effect, that they gave him freely two Subſidies from Proteſtants, four from Papiſts, and three from the Clergy.

The King taking notice of the ſmall appearance in the Houſe by reaſon of the Infection, Adjourn'd the Parliament to *Oxford*; and the firſt of *Auguſt* the Parliament met at *Oxford*, where they preſented his Majeſty a Petition againſt Recuſants, which the King readily and freely aſſented to. The King urgeth the ſpeedy contributions, which cauſed great debates, ſome were very free & willing, others were backward,

ward, and pretended the buſineſſe was managed with green heads, ſpeaking very unworthily of the Duke; the greater part that refuſed, reſolved upon a Remonſtrance; the King being informed of it, and fearing the diſtemper would grow too high, diſſolves the Parliament.

In *September* the States of *Holland* ſend over an Ambaſſadour to requeſt a League offenſive and defenſive, againſt their common enemies, the Emperour, and the King of *Spaine*; which the King conſented to, on condition they would bear a fourth part of the charge of the Fleet, *Buckingham* and *Holland* are ſent over into the *Low Countryes*, to adviſe with the Ambaſſadours of ſeverall Princes, about the reſtauration of the Kings ſiſter; but they were diſappointed, for the *Danes* denied ability, the *French* unwilling; upon their returne came the ſad newes of the ill ſucceſſe of our Fleete, who put out the 8 of *October*, and by the 12, were diſſipated by reaſon of a furious ſtorme, which was ſo violent, that 50 ſhips of 80 were miſſing for ſome time; the ſtorme being over, a Councell was called and concluded to annoy the Ships in *Gades* Bay, but finding it difficult by reaſon of a Fort juſt before it, orders were iſſued out to cleere it or ſecure it in order to the deſigne; but findiug it Impregnable by Sea, they conclude to attempt it by Land, Captain *Burroughs* an experienced Commander, with a Regiment

Regiment of foote was ordered for that ſervice who managed it with ſo much care, that a parley was immediately granted; the Sea-forces being permitted to goe on ſhore, took ſuch liking to the *Spaniſh* wines, that they grew diſorderd, which occaſioned the Admirall to prevent further miſchiefe to haſten home.

The Contagion raging in *London*, *Michaelmas* Terme was ordered at *Redding*, and ſpeciall Inſtructions were given to the Judges to put in execution the Statutes againſt Recuſants.

February the 2[d] 1625. was the day appointed for the Kings Coronation, which was performed with all uſuall and accuſtomed ſolemnity, except his paſſage through *London*, which ſaved ſome money, the Exchequer being low.

A Parliament was called, and met the 6 of *Feb.* the Commons began where they left, concerning *Religion*; the Lords preſent the King with a Petion concerning *Grievances* of their order. The King promiſed ſpeedy redreſſe. M[r] *Pim* of the Commons, diſcovers to the Houſe a Letter, and ſigned to the Lord Mayor of *York* for reprieving ſome Prieſts and Jeſuits: a Committee is ordered to examine it.

The King being ſenſible of the neceſſities of the Kingdome, demands ſupply, and by Sir *Richard Weſton* tells them, *That the Fleete was returned, victualls ſpent, and the men in great neceſſity for*

for want of pay, for which they were ready to mutiny, which would be of dangerous consequence; and that there were 40 *ſail ready to goe out, which want a preſent ſupply; that the Army on the Sea-coaſt wants victualls, and clothes, with other preſſing wants and neceſſities.* In ſtead of a ſupply, Mr *Clement Coke*, a Member of the Houſe of Commons, Inſolently delivers this; *It is better to die by a forraine Enemy, then to be deſtroy'd at home.* The King being adviſed of it, was ſenſibly troubled at it, ſends Sir *Richard Weſton* to require ſatisfaction, but they made very ſlow haſt in it, which occaſion'd him to ſummon both Houſes together, and by the Lord Keeper delivers his mind in part to them in a large Speech (much in vindication of the Duke) which being ended, the King ſpake as followeth.

I muſt withall put you in mind of times paſt, you may remember my Father, mov'd by your counſel, and wonne by your perſwaſion, brake the Treaties. In theſe perſwaſions I was your Inſtrument towards him, and I was glad to be Inſtrumentall in any thing which might pleaſe the whole body of the Realme; nor was there any one then in greater favour then this man whom you now traduce, and now when you find me ſo far intangled in war, that I have no honourable nor ſafe retreate; you make my neceſſity your priviledge, and ſet what rate you pleaſe upon your ſupplyes, a practice not very obli-

ing toward Kings: Mr Coke *told you it was better to die by a forraine Enemy, then to be deſtroy'd at home. Indeed I thinke it is more honourable for a King to be invaded and almoſt deſtroy'd by a forraine Enemy, then to be diſpiſed at home.*

The Commons nothing ſtartled at this, made a quick reply concerning the Remonſtrance; the King would have them to diſpatch buſineſſe of greater concernment, and there would be time enough for that. But the Houſes thought nothing of more concernment, then proceeding againſt the *Duke*; which gave occaſion to the Lord *Digby*, who long'd for nothing more then to exhibit 12 Articles againſt the Duke: The Duke being wary and vigilant, had long before provided Articles againſt *Digby*, though wanting one of the others number, which the next day were exhibited in Parliament.

Many rejoyced at it, that by their quarrelling truth was diſcovered, and they were ſo equally matcht, that it was hard to diſcover which had the better of it. But it reſted not here, for within few dayes the Commons drew up 13 Articles againſt the Duke, & preſented them to the Lords, and ſent a meſſage, deſiring he might be committed. Sir *Dudly Digs*, and Sir *John Eliot*, two principall Actors in the Charge, were ſent to the Tower. The Houſe Remonſtrate to the King, upon which they were diſcharg'd; the Duke having

ving made his defence, deliver'd it to the Lords, who ſequeſtred him from ſitting till the tryall was over.

The defence was expreſt with a great deale of humility and modeſty. But the Commons having gon ſo far, were reſolved to bring it to an upſhot, drew up a Declaration, to back it before the ſubſidyes, at which the King being much Incenſt, the next day, *June* 15. 1626. he diſſolved the Houſe; ſome interceding for ſome time, he replyed, *No not a minute.* That very day was the Earle of *Briſtoll* committed to the Tower; and Proclamation for burning all Copyes of the Commons Declaration before their diſſolution.

The breaking up of the Parliament was by ſome charg'd upon the Kings Indulgence toward the Duke.

The King of *France* pretending a martiall deſigne againſt *Italy*, and the *Vatoline*, craved of King *James* his ayd, at whoſe requeſt the King promiſed to lend the *Vantgard*, a gallant Ship of the Navy Royall; the Merchants on ſatisfaction to lend 6 more. The *Rotchellers* being moſt *Hugonets*, on pretence that the King had not ſlighted Fort *Lewis*, according to agreement, and taking the advantage of the Advance of the *French* Army for *Italy*, ſurprized the Iſle of *Rhe*, together with many Ships that were in the Harbour. King *Lewis* underſtanding of it, makes what warlike

preparation poſſibly he could, requires ayd of the *Dutch*. King *Charles* to performe his Fathers promiſe, lends the Ships to King *Lewis*, who together with the *French* and *Dutch* Ships, fall on *Subize* the *Staſiarch*, the chiefe Rebell, retaketh his ſtrong Holds, and chaſeth him to the Iſle of *Oleron*.

King *Charles* being ſenſible of his Brothers miſ-implying his Ships, ſent to demand the reſtitution of them; who anſwered that his ſubjects detained them contrary to his mind, and that he might get them as he could. The King, not being ſatisfied with this demand, and wiſely foreſeeing it might occaſion a further breach, looks home, and finds the *French* who attended the Queene, very inſolent, who Impoſed on the Queene a ſtrange kinde of penance, *viz. That ſhe ſhould go barefoot from Somerſet-Houſe to Tyburn Gallowes, to offer up her prayers for Prieſts and Jeſuits there executed for treaſon.* For which the King was very much diſcontented, and on the firſt of *January* 1626. he came to *Somerſet*-Houſe, attended by the Duke, and diverſe Officers of State, (all the Queens ſervants and attendants being the day before ſummoned to attend) he ſpake as followeth.

Gentlemen and Ladyes;

I am driven to that Extremity, as that I am perſonally come to acquaint you, that I deſire your

returne

returne for France; *true it is, the deportment of ſome amongſt you hath been very inoffenſive to me; but others againe have ſo dallied with my patience, and ſo highly affronted me, that I cannot, I will no longer endure it.*

Divers endeavoured to excuſe themſelves, but the King replyed, *I name none*: the Queen endeavoured to pacifie the King, but it would not ſerve; for a ſpeciall Order was ſigned for their departure, and ſent the Lord *Charlton* to give his Brother a true account of that action. The *French* King being informed of his Meſſage, would not permit him audience, but ſent Monſieur the Marſhall *de Baſſom Pierre*, as extraordinary Ambaſſadour, to demand their Reſtitution, who might as well have ſaved the labour, for it was in vaine, the King would by no means permit it: all the Merchants Ships were ſtopt by an Imbargo at *Burdeux*; which incenſt the King ſo high, that he reſolv'd on open wars with *France*.

And accordingly in *October* a Fleete of thirty ſail, under the Command of the Earle of *Denbigh* and the Lord *Willowby*, ſet out; which by a violent ſtorme were very much damaged, and forc't to return.

Anno 1626. dyed the Reverend Prelate Biſhop *Andrews*, a man very well skil'd in the Orientall Languages, truly pious and devout.

Three hundred thouſand pound was borrowed

by Loane toward the Relief of *Rotchell*, which was then intēded to be beſieged by the Duke of *Guiz*.

On the 27 of *June* the Duke with ſix thouſand horſe and foote, and ten of the Navy Royall, aſſiſted with ninety Merchant men, ſet ſail for *Portſmouth*, and publiſhed a *Manifeſto* of the Kings undertaking for the reliefe of the Proteſtants.

Sir *John Burroughs*, with divers Gentlemen of quality, and 1200 Souldiers landed in the Iſle of *Rhe*, who were received by the *French* valiantly, which by their valour made it hard to diſtinguiſh who had the better.

The Duke perceiving the backwardneſſe of the *French* to engage, lands his horſe, and ſends Sir *William Beecher* with 500 foote and ſome horſe, to the reliefe of *Rotchell*. Upon their approach to St *Martins* Towne, the Inhabitants immediately fled into the Caſtle. The Duke being poſſeſt of the Towne, raiſed batteries againſt the Caſtle, where after he had laine before it two moneths without doing any conſiderable hurt, and by poyſoning their ſprings, had almoſt inforc't them to yield, had not Monſieur *Balon* at high water by twelve Pinaces in the dead of the night ſupplyed their neceſſities; and on the 29 of *October* Marſhall *Schomberg* at Port *dela Pree*, landed 4000 foote, and 200 horſe, who facing the beſiegers, put them to a great fright: whereupon they

they reſolve to riſe & be gon, and in their retreat had diverſe skirmiſhes. The *French* with fury fell in on the reare of my Lord *Mountjoys* Troops, who endeavouring to fly, routed our own party; which the Enemy perceiving, purſue with violence. We loſt in that Encounter neere 2000 common Souldiers, and 50 Officers, priſoners of note 35. beſides 100 common Souldiers, which the King diſmiſt out of reſpect to his Siſter.

But the Duke being returned with thoſe few ſcattered Troops, the King reſolves ſpeedily to beſiege *Rotchell*; endeavouring to gain the Towne by famine, built three Forts, and drew a line toward the Land with many Redoubts within Muſket-ſhot of the Town, and by the Advice of Cardinall *Ritchlew* made a Huge Boone or Barachado a-croſſe the Chanell, almoſt 1500 yards in length, leaving a ſmall ſpace for the ebbing and flowing of the Sea.

The *Rotchellers* perceiving their utter ruine approaching, ſend over Deputies into *England*, to ſolicite the King in their behalfe, who promiſed what aſſiſtance he could.

The Kings neceſſities were at that time very great, wanting almoſt what ever was neceſſary for a warre.

He reſolves to ſummon a Parliament to meete on the 17th of *March* 1627.

March 17. 1627. the Parliament met, Sir *Jo.*

Finch was chosen Speaker; And thus the King speaks to them:

My Lords and Gentlemen,

The times are for action, for action, I say, not for words, therefore I shall use but a few; and (as Kings are said to be exemplary to their subjects. so) I wish you would imitate me in this, and use as few, falling upon speedy consultation. No man is, I conceive, such a stranger to the common necessities, as to expostulate the cause of this meeting and not to think supply to be the end of it; and as this necessity is the product & consequent of your advise, so the true Religion, the Laws and Liberties of this state, and just defence of our freinds and allies, being so considerably concern'd, wil be I hope argument enough to perswade supply; for if it be, as most true it is, my duty and yours to preserve this Church and Common-wealth, this exigent time certainly requires it.

In this time of common danger, I have taken the most antient speedy and best way for supply, by calling you together, if (which God forbid) in not contributing, what may answer the quality of my occasions, you doe not your duties, it shall suffice I have done mine. In the conscience whereof I shall rest content, and take some other course, for which God hath impowred me to save that, which the folly of some particular men might hazzard to lose.

Take not this as a menace (for I scorne to threat my inferiours) but as an admonition from him who

is

is tied both by nature and duty to provide for your preſervation; and I hope though I thus ſpeake, your demeanour will be ſuch as ſhall oblige me in thankfulneſſe to meet you oftner, then which nothing ſhall be more pleaſing to me.

Remembring the diſtractions of our laſt meeting, you may ſuppoſe I have no confidence of good ſucceſſe at this time; but be aſſured I ſhall freely forget and forgive what is paſt, hoping you will follow that ſacred adviſe lately inculcated, to maintaine the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

The Parliament being deeply affected with the neceſſities of our neighbour Proteſtants and freinds in eminent danger, forthwith granted five ſubſidies with unanimous conſent; Secretary *Cooke* brings the news to the King, *who wept for joy, and bid him tell them, he would deny them nothing of their juſt liberties.*

Immediatly the Houſe fall upon the peoples libertyes, and vote, that no freeman be impriſoned by King or Councell, without legall cauſe alledged.

They draw up a petition to this effect: 1. That no perſon be compeld to make, give, or yeild any gift, loan, benevolence, tax, but by common conſent of Parliament.

2. That no freeman be impriſoned or detained of his liberty, but by the Laws of the Land.

3. That the ſouldiers and mariners be removed from billiting, and the people eaſed for the time to come.

4. That

4. *That martial Law be revoked.*

Which petition was preſented, to which his Majeſty gave a ſpeedy anſwer, with plenary ſatisfaction, and withal told them, he having done his part, *if the Parliament have not a happy concluſion, the ſin was theirs, he was free.*

Which anſwer was received with great acclamation and joy. The Houſe having fared ſo well, fall a ripping up of old ſores, and drew up a *Remonſtrance*, which reflected upon the *Duke*, at which the King ſtood amazed.

They likewiſe were drawing a Bill againſt *Tunnage* and *Poundage*, which the King would by no means permit. On the 26 of *June* the King prorogued the Parliament to the 20 of *October*; and in his ſpeech made *an ample illuſtration of his conceſſions to the petition of right*, which by ſome was accounted a great failing. And now a 3[d] Fleet is ready at *Portſmouth*, for the releif of *Rochel*. The Duke was very diligent in preparation, when on the 23 of *Auguſt* 1628. the Duke having prepared himſelfe to wait on the King (who made that in his progreſſe) cal'd for his breakfaſt; the Duke comes downe from his chamber to a lower parlour, where taking leave of Sir *Tho. Frier* one of his Colonels, Juſt as he was going in, one *Felton* ſtabd him to the heart with a knife, which the Duke took out, but the effuſion of the blood was ſo great, that he died inſtantly: the Earl of

Cleveland

Cleveland and others that were within hearing, reported, that the murtherer ſeconded his blow with theſe words, *The Lord have mercy upon thy ſoul.* The murtherer imediatly went into the Kitchin; the report throughout the houſe was, *wher's the murtherer*, wch he miſconſtrued, *her's the murtherer*, ſuddenly ſtarting, cried, *I am he*; who was imediatly ſecured, and hardly eſcaped the fury of the ſervants: The King was at his devotion when the news was brought, who was not in the leaſt ſtartled at it.

The commons rejoice at it, and by this means hoped of a freer and more permanent correſpondency betwixt the King and people, which the event ſuddenly ſhewed.

The Dukes body was inter'd the 25 of *September*, at *Weſtminſter*, at the charge of his Executors.

Felton was arraigned at the Kings bench-bar, who upon examination confeſt, *That the only motive that induced him to the fact, was the late Remonſtrance of the Commons, and that he could not ſacrifice his life to a nobler cauſe, then by delivering his Country from ſo great an enemy. He being found guilty, was hanged at Tiburne, and his body* afterwards ſent to *Portſmouth* to be hanged in Chaines.

This tragicke act nothing hindred the Fleets motion, which by the perſonal induſtry & care of the

the King, ſet ſail from *Portſmouth* the 8 of *September* 1628. the Earl of *Lineſy* being Admiral, and being arived at the mouth of the haven, found that monſtrous *Boone* and *Baracado* finiſhed, which was deſigned by *Cardinal Ritchlew*, a croſs wind ſuddenly aroſe & beat them back with great confuſion, which the *Rochellers* beholding from the bulwarks, imediately ſet open the gates and ſubmitted themſelves wholly to the King, who entred the 8 of *October*, and found onely four thouſand remaining of twenty two thouſand; the Fleet upon the news returned home ſafe.

A Proclamation was proclaimed againſt Papiſts.

The 20 of *October* the Parliament met, divers complaints and petitions were exhibited touching the ſeiſing of marchants goods for *Tunnage* and *Poundage* The King had notice of it, ſummons them to the banquetting houſe, and thus ſpeaks:

The occaſion of that meeting was a complaint made in the lower Houſe for ſtaying ſome merchants goods, for denying Tunnage and Poundage, which difference might be ſoon deſided, were his words and actions rightly underſtood; for if he did not take theſe duties as appendixes to his hereditary prerogative, and had declared he chalenged them not of right, and onely deſired to enjoy them by the gift of his people, why did they not paſſe the Bill as they promiſed to him, to clear his by-paſt actions and future proceedings,

dings, especially in this his time of so great necessity. Therefore he did now expect they should make good what they promised, and put an end to all questions emergent to their delay.

Two Committees were appointed, one for Religion, the other for civil affairs; that for Religion report, *that upon due inspection they find it in a very tottering and declining condition:*

The other report, that many marchants had had their goods seised for not *paying the customes of Tunnage and Poundage, being then against the Petition of Right and privildge of Parliament; for which Sr Jo. Worsham, M. Daws, M. Carmarthen*, Farmers of the Customes, were required to give an account. The King *intervenes*, and tels the Parliament that what they did was as men adicted to his command, neither were they commitionated to take it as a due debt, but he presumed the Parliament would performe their large professions and grant it *by bill*.

They replyed the Farmers did it without warrant, the warrant being only to levy and collect, not to seize; for the Bill they desired his pardon, being to insist on matters of Religion first.

The King requests them to forbeare prosecuting these men, and intimated that what they did was by his warrant. The House in great discontent adjourned for some few dayes, and being met again, they resolved upon a Remonstance, which

the

the Speaker refuſing to read, and offering to riſe, *Mr. Hollis* held him, and ſwore he ſhould ſit there ſo long as they pleaſed; which not prevailing, Mr. *Hollis* read theſe enſuing Articles as the Proteſtation of the Houſe.

1. *Whoſoever ſhould bring in Innovation of Religion, or by favour ſeek to introduce Popery, or Arminianiſm, or other opinions diſagreeing from the true and orthodox Church, ſhall be reputed a Capitall enemy to the Kingdome and Common-wealth.*

2. *Whoſoever ſhall councell or adviſe the taking and levying the ſubſidies of Tunnage and Poundage, not being granted by Parliament, or ſhall be an actor or inſtrument therein, ſhall be reputed a Capitall enemy to this Common-wealth.*

3. *If any man ſhall voluntarily yeild or pay the ſaid Subſidies of Tunnage and Poundage, not being granted by Parliament, he ſhall be reputed a betrayer of the Liberties of* England, *and an enemy to the Common-wealth.*

At which the Houſe gave a great ſhout.

The King adviſed of it, ſent the Uſher of the blacke rod to diſſolve the Parliament who would not be admitted; Sir *Miles Hobert* lockt the door.

The

The King incenſed at their contempt ſent for the Captain of the *Penſioners* and *the Guard* to force a paſſage, the members fearing the iſſue, *ſlunk away.*

The King went preſently into the Houſe of Lords, and delivered his mind as followeth.

My Lords;

I never came here upon ſo unpleaſing an occaſion, it being the diſſolution of a Parliament; therefore you may have ſome cauſe to wonder why I ſhould not rather chooſe to doe this by Commiſſion, it being a generall Maxim *of Kings to leave harſh commands to their Miniſters, themſelves onely Executing pleaſing things; yet conſidering that Juſtice conſiſts as well in reward and praiſe of vertue, as puniſhment of vice, I thought it neceſſary to come here to day, to declare to you, and all the world, that it was meerely the undutifull and ſeditious carriage of the Lower Houſe, that hath made the diſſolution of this Parliament; and you my Lords, are ſo far from being cauſes of it, that I take as much comfort in your dutifull demeanour, as I am juſtly diſtaſted with their proceedings: yet to avoyd miſtakings, Let me tell you, that it is ſo far from me to adjudge all that Houſe guilty, that I know there are many there as dutifull ſubjects as any in the World, it being but ſome few Vipers among them that caſt this miſt of undutifulneſſe over moſt of their eyes; yet to ſay truth, there was a good number there that could*

could not be infected with this contagion; in ſo much that ſome did expreſſe their duties in ſpeaking, which was the Generall fault of the Houſe the laſt day.

To conclude, as theſe Vipers muſt look for their reward of puniſhment; ſo you, my Lords, muſt juſtly expect from me that favour and protection that a good King oweth to his loving and dutifull ſubjects.

And now my Lord Keeper doe what I command you; who in the Kings name diſſolv'd the Parliament.

The Parliament being diſſolv'd, the King ſets forth a Declaration of the Cauſes, Grounds, and Motives, that cauſed him to diſſolve them, together with an account of all the Tranſactions of this and the laſt Parliament.

Not long after the King ſent for ten of the laſt Parliament to appeare at the Councell Table, *viz.* Mr. *Hollis*, Sir *Miles Hobert*, Sir *John Eliot*, Sir *Peter Hayman*, Mr. *Selden*, Mr. *Stroud*, Mr. *Correton*, Mr. *Valentine*, Mr. *Long*, Mr. *Kirton*, who having been examin'd by the Lord Treaſurer, ſome were ſent to the Tower, ſome to the Gate-Houſe, others to the Fleete: which afterward begot a very high controverſie in Law.

The Queen being affrighted, was before her time delivered of a Son, who was baptized *Charles*, which lived not above two houres.

The

The States of *Venice* ſent over an Ambaſſadour to mediate for a peace betwixt us & the *French*, which was concluded in eight Articles, and confirmed with ſolemn Oaths on both ſides.

Two great Reaſons were given for the Kings ſuddaine conſent to a peace; the one was the ill ſucceſſe and bad fortune that alwayes attended his warlike deſignes; the other and maine, the ſinews of war being dried and ſhrunk up, the Exchequer was very barren.

Peter Reuben, the famous Painter of *Antwerp*, came over into *England*, and made overtures of a peace with *Spaine*, by offering the reſtitution of the *Palatinate* (then which nothing was more deſirable of the King) but he had not full power to performe.

On the 29 of *May* 1630. the Queen was deliver'd of her ſecond Son, who was baptized the 27 of *June* at St *James's*, with all Princely ceremony, and named *Charles*, which cauſed great rejoycings and acclamations among the people, excepting the Puritan party.

At his birth a Star appeared viſibly at noone day, juſt as the King went to St *Pauls* Church to give thankes; where he was preſented with theſe Verſes.

When to Pauls-*Croſs the Gratefull King drew*
A ſhining Star did in the Heavens appeare;
(*nere,*

Thou that consults with divine Mysteries,
Tell me what this bright Comet signifies:
Now is there borne a valiant Prince i'th West,
That shall Eclipse the Kingdoms of the East.

The King being deeply sensible of his brothers miseries, and being informed of a Diet at *Ratsbone*, sent Sir *Robert Anstruther* Ambassadour to the Emperour, and Estates in *Germany*, to mediate in his brothers behalfe; to which the Emperour return'd Answer, that no forraine businesse was to be medled withall at the Diet, but as soone as possibly he could, he would doe that which might be for his Honour, and he hoped to his Majesties content: upon which the Ambassadour returnes.

One *Layton*, a Rigid Presbyter, who publisht a book, call'd *Zions Plea*, (in which he excited the Parliament and People to kill all the Bishops. Very abusive also to the Queene, calling her the Daughter of *Heth* a *Canaanite*, an Idolatresse) was sentenced in the Star-Chamber to have his nose slit, his eares cropt, and stigmatized in the forehead; which he for some time prevented, by an Escape out of the Fleete, but being taken, underwent it.

The Peace betwixt *England* and *Spaine* was at last concluded, the Articles being the same in effect, with those that were betwixt King *James* and

and *Philip* the Third, excepting that the King of *Spaine* ſhould diſpoſe of all his Intereſt in the Emperour toward the reſtitution of the *Palatinate*; which was proclaimed Sunday the 27 of *November* 1630. with Great ſolemnity.

Aprill the 25. 1631. *Mervin*, Lord *Audley*, Earle of *Caſtle-Haven*, was arraigned at the Kings-Bench-Bar, before *Thomas* Lord *Coventry*, who for that day was appointed Lord High Treaſurer of *England*, he being found Guilty of Rape and Sodomy, was by his Peeres condemned, and Executed the 14 of *May* at Tower hill.

And on the 27 of *June* following, Mr. *Broadway*, and *Fitz Patrick*, ſervants to, and concriminaries with the Lord *Audley*, were tryed at the Kings-Bench-Bar, and being found Guilty, the one of Rape, the other of Sodomy, were condemned, and on the ſixt of *July* were executed at *Tyburne*.

The Queene was the 4th of *November*, 1631. deliver'd of her eldeſt Daughter, who was baptized *Mary*.

December 2d, 1632. The King was viſited with the ſmall Pox, but by Gods bleſſing ſoone recovered.

Anno 1632. The Church of St *Paul* (which by the pious zeale of our Anceſtors was rayſed to that huge bulke, that all Chriſtendome was not able to paralell) being through age decayed,

was by the piety of his Majesty, the Bishops, the Nobility, Gentry, and Commonalty of the Nation, begun to be repaired, and a very great progresse was made therein, but the unhappy differences of the Nation ensuing caus'd its obstruction.

Anno 1633. The King having been often solicited to goe into *Scotland*, in order to his personall Coronation; on the 13th of *May* he sets forward, with a Princely Traine: most of the *English* Nobility, all the *Scots* that attended here; and on the way was very Nobly treated by diverse of the Nobility and Gentry, especially by the Earle of *Newcastle* at *Welbeck*.

On the 10 of *June* he came safe to *Edenborough*, where he was Crowned with all outward seeming affection; and on the 20 of *July* return'd safe to the Queen at *Greenwich*.

In the beginning of *August* dyed the Reverend Prelate, *George Abbot*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*; *William Laud* then of *London* immediately succeeded him.

October the 13th 1633. the Queen was delivered of her second Son, who was baptized *James*; and on the 24 of the same moneth was by Letters patent created Duke of *York*.

The King taking into his Princely care the Irreverend and remisse service of God in the Kingdome of *Scotland*, sent Orders to be observed

ved by the Deane of his Chappell, as in *England.*

1 That prayer be ſaid twice a day, according to the *Engliſh* forme.

2 The Sacrament to be adminiſtred once a moneth, and to be received Kneeling.

3 That he which Officiates on Holy dayes, doe it in his Surplice.

Which though backt with a Letter, requiring exact obedience, the Deane durſt not performe, for feare of diſcontenting the people.

The King by the Advice of the Biſhops and Councell, Reviv'd his Fathers Declaration for tolerating Lawfull Sports on the Sunday, which gave great diſtaſt to the people, eſpecially to the puritanicall party.

On the ſecond of *February* being *Candlemas* day at night, the King and Queene were entertained at *White Hall* with a Mask of the Gentlemen of the Inns of Court; The like was never in *England* ſeene before for State and Magnificence; and afterward were Royally entertained by the Lord Mayor of *London*, with a ſtately Feaſt and Banquet.

1634. The *Engliſh* Coaſt was much perplext with Pirates of ſeverall Nations, and the Kings Dominion in the narrow Seas evidently uſurped by the *Dutch*, and defended by *Grotius* in his book, Entituled, *Mare Liberum*; which was

exactly Answered by the Learned *Selden* in his Book, Entituled, *Mare Clausum*.

The Exchequer at that time was very much drained: The King having tyed himselfe up by granting the Petition of Right, could not tax or levy money without consent of Parliament, and how to expect it from them, with whom he had parted so fouly, he could not imagine. He declares his Intentions to his Attorney *Noy*, together with the Necessity of raysing money, but desires it to be done Legally, who after much study and paines finds out an ancient president of raising a Tax for setting forth a Navy in case of danger without a Parliament. The King was very glad of it, Writs were Instantly Issued out to the Sea-port Townes, to raise money for a certaine number of Ships well provided, for the safety of the Nation: they complained that it equally concern'd the whole Nation; upon which a Tax was laid throughout the whole Kingdome, every one endeavoured to excuse it; and some alledged it was against the Petition of Right, it being done out of Parliament, which begat a great quarrell.

Great Contest happened in *Ireland* this yeare between the Protestants and Papists; which occasioned the Lord *Strafford*, then Lord Deputy to summon a Parliament, for the raysing of moneys, for the payment of the Army, and the

Kings

Kings Revenue, which was managed with ſo much wiſdome and prudence by the Lord Deputy, that he obtained his deſire.

There was likewiſe a Synod called, wherein the Articles of 1615 were repealed, and the 39 Articles of the Church of *England* eſtabliſhed in their room: they did likewiſe unanimouſly declare their conſent and agreement with the Church of *England* in the profeſſion of the ſame Chriſtian faith.

The *Scots* were now Hatching miſchievous deſignes againſt the King, which they colour'd with ſpecious pretences; as, *The Kings endeavouring to Intrench on their Liberties*, and after ſome time were ſo Inſolent as to charge the King *with favouring of Papiſts*, in a deſperate Libell, which by the care and diligence of the Lords of the Councell was ſuppreſt: the Author was diſcovered to be one *Hagge*, and the principall abettor the Lord *Bellamore*, who being found Guilty, received the ſentence of death, but upon his application to the Kings mercy was pardoned.

The 29 of *September* (by the procurement of the Earle of *Arundell*) one *Robert Parr* aged 160) was brought to *London*, one of the wonders of this laſt age.

In *November* following, the Prince Elector came to *London*, to tender his reſpect to his Un-

cle, and to ſolicite touching his reſtitution; and not long after came his ſecond Brother Prince *Robert*.

On the 28 of *December* 1635. was borne the Kings ſecond Daughter, and was the ſecond of *January* baptized *Elizabeth*.

March the ſixth, *William Juxſon*, Lord Biſhop of *London*, was made Lord Treaſurer; a man of great Piety and Integrity.

At this time, if ever might *England* be ſaid to be in a happy condition; the Church the moſt Glorious and ſplendid that ever was ſince the Apoſtles times; the Civill Government managed by a King, who for piety and morality was not Inferiour to any in the Chriſtian world; Incompaſſed about with peace on all ſides; what mortall would ever have imagined, that this bright Sun-ſhine of Felicity ſhould be ſo ſoon Eclipſed.

William Laud, Lord Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, taking notice of the careleſſe obſervance of the Eccleſiaſticall Canons, which he ſtrictly put in practice in his ſolemne Viſitation, and in his zeale gave order for the Removing of the Communion Table to the Eaſt end of the Church, upon an aſcent, and to be rayled In, to prevent profanation; gave great diſtaſt to the Puritan party, who charg'd him with Innovation.

1636. In *July* ſet forth the Kings Royall Fleete,

Fleete, to ſcowre the Seas of Pirates, and to prevent the Intrenching of the *Hollander* in Fiſhing upon our Coaſts, which was effected; but by their humble Requeſt, the King Indulgently Granted them Liberty.

In *September* the Earle of *Arundell* was ſent Extraordinary Ambaſſadour (attended by a Noble Traine) to the Emperour, to ſolicite in behalfe of the Prince Elector, who being wearied with delayes, return'd in a diſcontent.

The unhappy Controverſie of Ship-money began now to be diſputed.

The Writs for rayſing Ship-money having been formerly Iſſued out, divers refuſed to pay, among the reſt Mr. *Hamden* of *Buckingham-ſhire*, by wilfull default refuſed, and deſired it might be argued in Law, which occaſioned the King to write a Letter to Sir *John Brampſton*, Lord Chief Juſtice of the Kings Bench, Sir *John Finſh*, Lord Chiefe Juſtice of the Court of Common Pleas, Sir *Humphry Davenport*, Baron of the Exchequer, and to the reſt of The Judges of the ſeverall Courts, to know their opinion, who joyntly and ſeverally gave their opinion, that it was Lawfull: upon which, Proceſſe is immediately Iſſued out againſt Mr. *Hamden*, who demurr'd and deſired the Judges opinion, which was argued in the Exchequer, the Major part were for the King, onely Judge *Crooke* and Judge *Hutton* ſeemed to favour

favour the other party, but Judgement was paſt by the Barons againſt *Hamden*.

On the 17 of *March* 1636. was borne *Anne* the Kings third Daughter.

In *June* following, Mr. *Prin*, Dr *Baſtwick*, and Mr. *Burton*, three violent and reſtleſſe ſpirited men, were ſentenc'd in the High Commiſſion Court, for ſeditious and ſcandalous Libells, by them made and diſperſt againſt the Biſhops, and their Eccleſiaſtical Government; which ſentence was by ſome accounted harſh and ſevere.

The King knowing the neceſſity of a mutuall Compliance in matters of Religion, and underſtanding his Fathers Intention in compoſing a Liturgy for the Church of *Scotland*, Orders the Biſhop of *Canterbury*, the Biſhop of *Ely*, together with diverſe other Biſhops of both Nations, to reviſe and correct, as they ſhould think meet, the Service, Compiled in his Fathers life time, (which very little differ'd from that of *England*) orders it to be ſent to the Councell in *Scotland* to be made uſe of.

When on the 23 of *July* 1637. the Dean of *Edenborough* began to read the Book in S[t] *Gilet* Church, a ſuddain uproar began by the women and baſer ſort of people; The Biſhop appointed to preach goes into the Pulpit, hoping to convince them of their Irreverend Carriage, which nothing prevailed, for they were the more Inſolent,

lent, flinging ſtones, ſtooles, and what ever elſe came next to hand, ſo that he hardly eſcaped with life.

Diverſe other Churches were likewiſe Infeſted with the like fury and madneſſe; but by the Induſtry of the Archbiſhop of St *Andrews*, Lord Chancelour, and other Magiſtrates, the tumult was appeaſed, ſome were afterward apprehended, and endeavours made to finde out the firſt beginner.

But it reſted not here, for not long after it was obſerved, that a great concourſe of people from all parts of that Kingdome came to *Edenborough*, which occaſioned the Lords of the Councell to put forth ſeverall Proclamations to prevent the like diſorders; but they nothing prevailed; for the next day the Biſhop of *Galloway* going to the Councell, was followed by a great multitude, railing and reviling him, untill he came to the Councell-doore, where he was no ſooner enter'd, but they beſet the Houſe with very great multitudes, threatning deſtruction to all that were within. The Councell immediately require ayde of the Provoſt and other Magiſtrates of the City, who returne anſwer, that they were in the like danger. The tumult ſtill increaſing, they of the City were forc't for the ſafegard of their own lives to ſubſcribe as followeth.

1. *To joyne in oppoſition to the Service-Book, and to Petition againſt it.*

2. *To reſtore* Ramſey *and* Rollock, *two ſilenced Miniſters.*

3. *To receive in* Mr Henderſon, *formerly ſilenced.*

Which being ſigned, the Councell thought was a good ſtep to ſuppreſſe the tumult, but entring into the High ſtreet, The Lord Treaſurer and other Lords were afreſh aſſaulted, trodden under-foote, and brought back by violence to the Councell-Houſe, where being in great danger, they require ayde of diverſe Noblemen diſaffected to the Common-prayer-book, who promiſed what aſſiſtance they poſſibly could, and in the end return'd home ſafe.

In the afternoon proclamation was made at the croſſe of *Edenborough*, for prevention of the like diſorders, but to ſmal effect; ſome Citizens demanding the reſtitution of the Miniſters, and the performance of what was ſubſcribed.

Suddenly two petitions were preſented againſt the Common-prayer book, and the Compoſers and Abettors of it, which petitions were ſent to the King (with the narrative of the whole) who immediatly ſent inſtructions for adjourning the Tearm to *Sterling* a ſtrong place, and to make proclamation of ſevere penalties to be inflicted

on

on the breakers and contemners of the peace; which was no ſooner proclaimed but the Lord *Hume*, *Lindſey* and divers others proteſt againſt it, and in contempt of Authority, compeld the Heralds to hear the Proteſt, or Covenant read, all which being imparted to the King, he ſends Marqueſſe *Hamilton* as high Commiſſioner, to ſettle peace, and a right underſtanding, who dealt treacherouſly and deceitfully, trifling away eleven moneths time, having three times returned to and again for *England*, and at laſt publiſhed the Kings gracious Proclamation nulling the Service book, and high Commiſſion, promiſing an Aſſembly to be held at *Glaſcoe*, *Novem.* 31. 1638. and a Parliament at *Edenborough* the 15. of *May* 1639, but this nothing ſatisfied, for the more the King granted, the more averſe they were.

During the treaty the Covenanters had provided Officers, Armes, and what was neceſſary for a war. The General Aſſembly being met they proceed to declare againſt the Book of Common prayer, which occaſioned the Biſhops to draw up a proteſt againſt their proceedings, and in the concluſion by the Unanimous conſent of all the Councel, excepting *Argile*, the Aſſembly was diſſolved. Proclamation was made and publiſhed throughout the Nation, ſhewing the grounds and reaſons of their diſſolution, which pro-

proclamation was oppoſed by the Covenanters, with a proteſtation to adhere to all their former Covenants to put by all the Biſhops: Some they excommunicate, and not long after totally aboliſhed Epiſcopacy, as being (as they pretended) inconſiſtant with the word of God and Lawes of that Nation. Which occaſioned the Marqueſſe and Commiſſioners to returne for *England* ſeemingly much diſcontented.

In the interim the Covenanters began to raiſe Armes, Levy ſouldiers, Impoſe taxes upon the people, ſeize ſome of the Kings Caſtles, raiſe fortifications, and prepare for a war, and choſe *David Leſley* an old ſouldier to be General.

Toward the latter end of *October* 1638. came the Queen mother into *England*, many of the Common people were troubled at it, as being generally by them lookt upon as a forerunner of a greater miſcheife.

The *Scots* are very high and inſolent, aſſuming all authority, and invent new and unheard of Judicatures in defiance to the King and Counſel; and having caſt of Epiſcopal Juriſdiction, declare for the Calviniſtical presbyterian Government which for a long time had bin hatching in that Kingdome, but could never take head till then.

The King to ſuppreſſe their inſolency, by the adviſe of the Biſhops, prepares an Army, which they

they contributed very largely to ,and being backed with the assistance of the Nobility and Gentry, a considerable force is raised, the Earle of *Arundell* being made General.

The King on the 17 of *March*, the day of his Inauguration advances against the *Scots*.

The *Scots* hearing of the Kings advance march forward under the Conduct of their Generall *David Lesley* to meet him, with Petition in one hand, and their Armes in the other, and on the 28. of *May* both Armies came within view. The *Scots* after some time sent to treat about a pacification, the King willingly consented to it; and for the *English* were chosen the Earls of *Holland*, *Pembroke*, *Salisbury*, and *Barkshire*, and Sir *Henry Vane*: for the Presbyterian Covenanters, the Earles, of *Rothes* and *Dunferling*, Lord *Louden*, *Douglas*, *Archibald*, *Johnson*, and *Alexander Henderson*; Who after much Consultation conclude Articles of pacification on both sides, which were signed the 18 of *June*. Which Articles were as followeth.

On the Kings part.

1. *His Majesty to confirme what his Commissioners promised in his name.*

2. *That a Generall Assembly be called to sit at Edenborough* August 6.

3. *That*

3. That a Parliament be called and sit at Edenborough the 20 of August.

4. That he recall all forces by sea and land, and restore all ships arested and detained since the pretended Assembly at Glascow, upon the Covenanters disarming and disbanding of their forces, dissolving their tables, and restoring to the King all his castles, forts and ammunition, and releasing all the persons, lands and goods, then under restraint since the pretended Assembly at Glascow.

This to be done by declaration.

On the Covenanters part,

1. All the forces of Scotland to be disbanded within forty eight houres after publication of the Kings declaration.

2. They to render up after the said publication all Castles, Forts, Ammunition of all sorts, so soone as the King should send to receive them.

3. They to hold no meetings, treatings or consultations, but such as are warranted by act of Parliament.

4. They

4. *They to deſiſt from all fortifications, and theſe to be remitted to the Kings pleaſure.*

5. *They to reſtore to all the Kings ſubjects their lands, liberties, houſes, goods, and meanes taken or detained from them ſince the firſt of* Feb. *laſt.*

Notwithſtanding the declaration, the Scots are ſtil averſe, and draw up a Proteſtation of ſticking cloſe to the late General Aſſembly at *Glaſcow*, and to their ſolemne Covenant, and perfidiouſly broke all their Articles of agreement, continue their meetings, neglect ſlighting the fortifications and continue their officers in pay; which with many other inſolencies, compeld the King to conſider of reducing them to obedience. The King ſummons his Privy Councel, who conclude a Parliament to be called the 13 of *April* 1640, and for the preſent, each of the Councel (except *Hamleton* who pretended poverty) ſubſcribed large Contributions for the carrying on of the war, untill ſuch time as the Parliament ſhould convene, which was a leading card for the reſt of the Nobility, the Judges and others.

The Scots being informed of the Kings Preparation for a war, ſent the Lord *Dunferling*, Lord *Louden*, Sir *Will. Douglas*, and M. *Barkham*, as Commiſſioners to repreſent the affaires of their tranſactions, which were friendly received by

the King, and he well hoped that all differences might be composed with lenity and gentlenesse: but it could not possibly be, for during the treaty most of the Nobility that wisht well to the Kings interest in *Scotland* are imprisoned, procured old souldiers out of *Holland*, made divers fortifications, required ayd of the King of *France*, and by colouring their designes with the pretence for Religion and the cause of God, they had gained a very strong party here in *England*.

By this time Episcopacy was totally extirpated in *Scotland*, and the Presbyterian Contagion began to reigne here in *England*.

The Bishop of *Canterbury*, a man learned, pious and devout (though unseasonably zealous) was by the vulgar lookt upon as a great freind and favourer of Popery, by reviving ancient Ceremonies in the Church, and service of God, which gave great occasion of discontent to the more precise and godly party.

On the 13 of *Aprill* 1640. the Parliament began, and were composed for the most part of persons of Honour, affectionate to Religion, and their Country, onely some few violent restlesse spirited men, that endeavoured to represent all the transactions of the King in the most ugly colours.

The King laid before them the treacherous designs of the Scots, and demands 12 subsidies,

Mr.

Mr. *Pim* and divers other members made long ſpeeches, reciting the greivances both of Church and State, which were very many; for it is with Government both Eccleſiaſticall & Civil, as it is with watches, that how good and excellent ſoever they be, length of time diſorders them, they urge that there was never more need of redreſſing grievances, and that would be the onely way to procure the Subſidies required. The King promiſed to redreſſe the grievances afterward. The King ſeeing them very backward concerning the Subſidies which his preſſing neceſſities call'd for, on the fift of *May* came into the Houſe, and diſſolv'd the Parliament, uſing Civill Language, proteſting that *he would governe as much according to Law, as if a Parliament were conſtantly ſitting*; yet Mr *Belloſis*, and Sir *John Hotham* were committed for ſpeeches a ſmall time, and Mr *Crew* Chaireman to the Committee for Miniſters, was committed to the Tower for refuſing to diſcover ſome Petitions preſented to the Parliament.

The Convocation now ſitting had formed an Oath for maintaining their Hierarchy, (as the *Scots* on the other ſide had Covenanted for the deſtruction of Epiſcopacy;) for which they were much blamed by many good men.

They likewiſe granted a large Contribution of 4*s*. in the pound for ſix years to be aſſeſt on

all the Clergy of *England*, toward the carrying on of the *Scotch* war, which was lookt upon as Illegall, being without conſent of Parliament.

And now the *Engliſh* in Imitation of the *Scots*, began in a rude manner to aſſault the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* (as they did the Archbiſhop of St *Andrews*) conceiving him to be the onely man that adviſed the King to break up the Parliament; and on Munday the 16 of *May* 1640. a great number of rude diſorderd perſons meet together, and goe to his houſe at *Lambeth*, beſet it, but he being forewarned had ſufficiently provided for his own ſafety. Some of the principall were apprehended, and committed to the *White Lyon* in *Southwarke*, which not long after was violently by the multitude broke open, and the priſoners diſcharged. One of the Principall Ring-leaders was afterwards apprehended, and condemned to be hang'd drawn and quartered, to terrifie the reſt.

The King being in want, applyes himſelfe to the City for ſupply, but they being diſcontented at the laſt diſſolution, pretend poverty; a likely thing, after ſo many yeares of peace, plenty, and proſperity, as they had enjoyed under his Government; beſides they are a little troubled at the queſtioning of their *London-Dery* Lands in *Ireland* by the Star-Chamber.

The Gentry were generally more free, and afforded

afforded large Contributions, by which meanes the Army began to Muſter, the Earle of *Northumberland* was appointed Generall, and the Earle of *Strafford* Lieutenant Generall; but both being indiſpoſ'd in health, the King reſolved to goe himſelfe in perſon.

In *July* 1640. The Queene was delivered of a Son, who was baptized *Henry*.

Auguſt 20. 1640. The King advances toward the North, the Army having rendevouzed ſome dayes before; whether being come, he was informed of the ſad diſaſter of a defeate given by *Leſley* to 1200 Horſe and 3000 foote, under the Command of the Lord *Conway*, who were left to ſecure the paſſe over the River *Tine*, neer *Nuburne*; as likewiſe Sir *Jacob Aſtley* Governour of *Newcaſtle*, quit the Towne, after he had ſunck all the Ordinance, as being no way tenable.

By this time the Earle of *Strafford* was recover'd, and came to his command, much troubled at my Lord *Conways* loſs; which *Conway* ſtoutly alledg'd was neither through neglect nor overſight.

Yet notwithſtanding the Covenanters had a Check in their own Country, *Leſley* having left ſome ſuperfluous Ordnance at *Dounſe*, which the Garriſon of *Barwick* being advertiſed of, adventure forth, and did ſeaze them; which allarum'd the Earle of *Haddington*, who with 2000 horſe

and foote purſue, and with a very ſharp Encounter reſcue them, which were carried back to *Durlaſſe*. The Earle being at dinner the next day with diverſe Knights and Gentlemen in a roome over the Magazine of Powder, in the midſt of their mirth they were ſuddenly blowne up, whether by caſualty or on purpoſe, it was not known.

In *September* following, the King was at *Yorke* preſented with a Petition, ſubſcribed by eleven of the *Engliſh* Nobility; To which he made Anſwer as followeth.

Before the receipt of your Petition, his Majeſty well foreſaw the danger that threatens himſelfe and Crowne, and therefore reſolveth the twenty-fourth of this moneth to ſummon all the Peeres, and with them to conſult what in this caſe is fitteſt to be done, for his own honour, and ſafety of the Kingdome, where they with the reſt may offer any thing that may conduce to theſe ends.

And accordingly they were by Writs from the Lord Keeper ſummoned to attend the 24 of *September*.

Great were the ſufferings at that time of the Northerne Counties; for *Leſley* the *Scots* Generall had impoſed a tax of 350 *l. per diem* on the Biſhoprick of *Durham*; and 300 *l. per diem* on *Northumberland*, on penalty of plundering; and likewiſe ſeaz diverſe *Engliſh* Ships laden with Corne in *Newcaſtle*-Road, as lawfull prize.

On

On the 24 of *September*, the Lords assembled at *Yorke*, where it was resolv'd that a Parliament should assemble the third of *November* following, and to desire a speedy Treaty with the *Scots* at *Yorke*; the *Scots* replied, it was no way safe for them, by reason that my Lord of *Strafford*, Generall of the Kings Army, had proclaimed them traytors in *Ireland*, before the King had done it in *England*; he being an utter Enemy to them, and one whom they did Intend to Impeach.

At last *Rippon* is the place agreed on; The Commissioners on both sides are Chosen; The *Scots* present their demands to this purpose.

1. *To consider how their Army should be maintain'd till the Treaty be ended, and their peace secured.*

2. *If more Commissioners be required, they may be convai'd with safety.*

3. *All Intercourse of Letters betwixt them, and the Parliament, to be convai'd with safety.*

4. *That there may be a free correspondency of Commerce with* Newcastle, *especially for Victualls.*

Which Propositions at first seem'd very hard to the *English*, who thought it more reason first to

provide for their own Army; but the Conquering ſword decides the Controverſie. The *Engliſh* muſt yeeld to the *Scots* unreaſonable demands.

After many meetings of the Commiſſioners, at laſt in thirteen Articles they agreed upon a ceſſation, which was ſigned by the King the 16 of *October*: but the Grand Treaty, was by their ſupplication to the King, appointed at *London*; and in the meane time all acts of Hoſtility to ceaſe.

At that time the Earle of *Montroſſe*, who had acted all along with the Covenanters, began to diſcover the treacherous Deſignes of the *Scots*; and now plainly ſaw that they meant nothing leſſe then what they pretended, viz. *The Honour of his Majeſty, and the preſervation of Religion (as alwayes the vileſt actions, are covered with the moſt ſpecious pretences)* yet was ſo wiſe as not preſently to diſcover himſelfe, but from time to time advertiz'd his Majeſty of the proceedings; which Letters by *Hamiltons* advice were taken out of the Kings packets, tranſcribed and ſent to the Covenanters, who diſſembled it to the Earle, but caſt durt in his face, raiſing frivolous aſperſions, endeavouring to make him odious to the people.

Great was the Expectation of the whole Kingdome for the happy meeting of the Parliament, and every ſmall obſtruction was lookt on

as

as a great Impediment, many Good men hoped for the redreſſe of Grievances; others waited to ſpit that venom, which they had a long time contracted.

In *November* 1640. the Parliament began, where the King in a Gracious Speech, declared *his earneſt deſire for the happineſſe and proſperity of the Kingdome, giving an account of the* Scotch *war, and deſired them, as he promiſ'd he would, to lay aſide all prejudice, and he would now clearely and freely put himſelfe upon the love and affection of his* Engliſh *ſubjects; deſiring them to conſider the beſt way for the ſafety and ſecurity of the Kingdome of* England, *and in order to it, for ſatisfaction of their juſt Grievances, wherein he would heartily concur, that the world might ſee his Intentions were to make this a Glorious and flouriſhing Kingdome; freely leaving it to them where to begin; and concluding, That it ſhould not be his fault if this were not a good and happy Parliament.*

Many Members made long Speeches about Grievances, as Sir *Ben: Ruddier*, Mr. *Grimſton*, Mr. *Pim*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, and others, which were backt by diverſe other Members.

Their firſt buſineſſe was to Vindicate diſtreſſed Miniſters, diverſe were inlarged, and reſtored to their former Livings. Many Petitions were preſented from moſt parts of the Kingdome for Redreſſe of Grievances.

The

The Lords complaine that the priviledges of their Houſe were broken, becauſe the Earle of *Warwick*, and the Lord *Brooks*, had their Studies and Cabinets ſearched.

The Houſe diſcharged Mr. *Prin*, Mr. *Burton*, and Dr *Baſtwick* out of priſon; and Voted Mr. *Burton* 6000 *l.* damage: Mr. *Prin* and Dr *Baſtwick* 5000 *l.* a piece.

Mr. *Denzill Hollis*, not many dayes after, was ſent from the Commons to the Lords to Impeach the Earle of *Strafford* of High Treaſon; Mr. *Pim* made a report to the Houſe what Capitall Crimes were objected againſt him, upon which in fourteen Articles he is Charg'd by Mr. *Pim*. The Earle is forthwith ſequeſtred the Houſe, and committed to the Black Rod.

On the 18 of *December*, Biſhop *Wren*, and Biſhop *Laud*, are Voted by the Commons Guilty of High Treaſon, and a Charge was immediately brought in againſt Biſhop *Laud*, upon the Reading of which he is order'd to the Tower, but upon his requeſt was reſpited for two dayes.

Sir *Francis Windibanke* principall Secretary of State fled, and not long after him my Lord *Finch*, one that had been very Active for Ship-money, which was then Voted Illegal; and moſt of the Judges were Voted Delinquents.

The Parliament began to ſtrike a terror into all that had any way offended, or had been violent

lent in action, both in Church and State.

In *December* Alderman *Penington* with a great multitude out of *London* (for now it was cuſtomary for Petitioners to come in great numbers) Petitioned the Houſe againſt Epiſcopall Government, and other Ceremonies of the Church, of which a Committee was appointed to conſider.

The Armies in the North lay heavy upon the Kingdome, which moved the Houſe to allow 100000 *l.* toward their preſent pay, and the money to be borrowed of the City of *London*, untill the ſame be rayſed by ſubſidy.

The King ſummons both Houſes together to the Banqueting Houſe, and *declares himſelfe not ſatisfied with their ſlow proceedings, and the Great Charge of maintaining two Armyes; next of the low condition of his Navies and Forts, whereby his enemies are encouraged, and his friends diſheartned; and likewiſe tooke notice of diverſe ſtrange Petitions preſented to the Houſe againſt the Government of the Church; he told them, he was content with a Reformation, not an alteration of Church-Government. He tooke notice of a Bill preparing in the Houſe, for frequent Parliaments to be elected by the Sheriffes, without his conſent, which he could by no means admit of, it being an Inſeparable right of his Crowne; and did freely confeſſe that frequent Parliaments were the beſt means for preſerving a right underſtanding betwixt him and his ſubjects.*

Theſe

These were the two principall rocks he would have them avoyd.

Not long after, arrived the Dutch Ambassadour, to negotiate in behalfe of a Match, betwixt the Prince of *Orange* and the Lady *Mary*, the Kings eldest daughter, which the King thought fit to Impart to the Parliament, they for the present doe nothing in it, but proceed to the drawing up the Bill for a Trienniall Parliament, which being past by both Houses, was the 16 of *Feb.* presented to his Majesty for his consent.

To whom he declares himself, reminding them, *that this was one of the two rocks which he formerly told them of, and that the Consequence of it was such, that never Bill past the House of more favour to the subject then this; minding them that by reason of their proceedings, he might justly question the doing it, and took notice how they had taken the Government all in pieces; how that a skilfull Watchmaker to clense his Watch will take it asunder, and when it is put together, it will goe better, provided no pin be omitted. Now I have done this on my part, you know what to doe on yours, reposing Great Trust and confidence in your affection.*

The passing of this Bill, was by wise men thought to be none of the least of his failings.

Judge *Barkly* was by the Usher of the Black Rod arrested, as he sat on the Kings Bench, for high treason.

Thomas

Thomas Earle of *Strafford* was next brought upon the ſtage, the Articles exhibited againſt him were from 14 made 28, and on the 22 of *March* 1640. his Triall began. The place appointed was *Weſtminſter*-Hall, where ſcaffolds were raiſed on both ſides, nine degrees in height: The two uppermoſt for the *Scotch* Commiſſioners, and the *Iriſh* Lords: In the midſt in a lower aſcent ſat the Peeres of the Realme; a Throne alſo was erected for the King, but he never appear'd publiquely, but was every day of the Triall in a Cloſe Gallery to heare and obſerve the whole proceedings, and took notes. The Earle of *Arundell* was Lord High Steward, and the Earle of *Linſey* Lord High Conſtable.

The Charge was principally managed by Mr. *Glin* and Mr. *Maynard*, both Members of the Commons Houſe; fifteene dayes together was the Earle arraigned, and gave in his anſwer to every particular Charge.

The Commons Charge him afreſh by Mr. *Pim* concerning ſome Notes taken by Secretary *Vane*, which were diſcover'd by his ſon, of his telling the King, *he had an Army in* Ireland *which his Majeſty might Imploy to reduce this Kingdome to obedience.*

He is againe call'd to the Barre, and Mr. *Glin* and Mr. *Pim* endeavour to prove him Guilty by Law; They extend his Crimes, and make him as

Odious

Odious as possible they can. The Earle moves for Councell, which the Peeres could not in reason deny: The Commons oppose, but after three dayes contest, the Peeres prevaile; Councell is assign'd him, *viz.* M. *Lane*, The Princes Attorney, Mr. *Gardner*, Recorder of *London*, Mr. *Loe*, and Mr. *Lightfoote*, and Saturday the 17 of *April* was appointed for him and his Councell to appeare, where his Councell argued his case in Law; that day they adjourn, not appointing any time for their next meeting.

The Commons House Vote him Guilty of high Treason, upon the evidence of Sir *Henry Vanes* notes, which Bill of Attainder was sent up to the Lords, which in their House was much opposed.

Some few dayes after, Mr. St *John*, The Kings Soliciter, was sent by the Commons to the Lords, to Justifie the Bill by Law, which accordingly was by him performed in *Westminster*-Hall, The Earle being present, and The King in his accustomed place.

The Peeres in their House proceed to Condemnation.

The King having notice of it, on the first of *May* Calls both Houses together, *where he declares, That he had been present at the whole Triall, and that in Conscience he could not condemne him of high Treason.*

He

He likewiſe in Vindication of the Earle, declares.

1. *That he never had any Intention to bring over the* Iriſh *Army, nor ever was adviſed by any body ſo to doe.*

2. *That there never was any debate before him, either in publick Councell, or private Committee, of the diſloyalty of his* Engliſh *ſubjects.*

And that though he could not in Conſcience condemne him of high Treaſon, yet he could not cleare him of miſdemeanours; He deſired them to conſider what a tender Conſcience was, and that to ſatisfie his people, he would doe much, but in this of Conſcience, neither fear nor any other reſpect, ſhould make him goe againſt it. He deſired them to find out ſome middle way, and was of opinion that for miſdemeanours he thought him not fit to ſerve him, or the Common-wealth, in any place of truſt, no not a Conſtable.

This ſpeech gave much diſcontent to both Houſes.

Sunday, *May* the ſecond, The Prince of *Orange* was married to the Lady *Mary* at *White Hall*, with Great ſolemnity and triumph.

The next day diverſe ſeditious perſons had ſtirred up the multitude, to the number of 5000 or 6000. who in a Tumultuous manner came arm'd to *Weſtminſter*, crying out for Juſtice to be executed on the Earle, committed outrages on divers

vers Lords, but by faire promiſes of my Lord *Chamberlain*, they were appeaſed.

They likewiſe poſted at *Weſtminſter*-Hall Gate, and the *Exchange*, a Catalogue of thoſe that oppoſed the Bill of Attainder, under the title of *Strafordians*.

The fift of *May* a Motion was made in the Houſe for a loan of 650000 *l.* to be Lent till it was Levied by Subſidy, provided the King would paſs a Bill not to adjourne, prorogue, or diſſolve this Parliament, without the conſent of both Houſes; upon which Motion a Bill was order'd to be drawne up.

The Lords by advice of the Judges, Vote the Earle Guilty of the 15 and 19 Articles. And at a Conference of both Houſes, it was ordred, That ſome Lords be ſent to the King with the two Bills; one for executing the Earle, The other for continuance of this Parliament; which accordingly was done on Saturday; and The King promiſed his anſwer on Monday.

All the Sabbath day he was much perplext within himſelfe. The Clamours of the multitude, were great, he ſends for the Judges to adviſe, ſummons the Privy Councell, and with them ſpends much time in arguing the Caſe; ſends for five Biſhops, viz. *London*, *Lincolne*, *Carlile*, *Durham*, and Biſhop *Uſher*, who for Law wholly remit him to the Judges, and for Conſcience, he having

having heard the whole proceedings, if he conceiv'd him Guiltleſſe, he ought not to condemne him.

The Judges in part ſatisfie the King, by declaring that he was Guilty of high Treaſon.

The Earle himſelfe that day writ a Letter with his own hand, *To ſet his Majeſties Conſcience at Liberty, humbly requeſting him, to prevent ſuch miſchiefes as might enſue upon his refuſall, to paſs the Bill*; *and, That his conſent herein, ſhould acquit him to God more then all the world beſide.*

Munday the 10th of *May*, his Majeſty being wearied with complaints, granted a Commiſſion to the Earle of *Arundell*, Lord Privy Seale, Lord Chamberlain, and others, to paſs the two Bills.

The next day being much afflicted in his ſpirit, he wrote to the Lords, and ſent it by the Prince, wherein he requeſts, *That although he had paſt the Bill of Attainder againſt The Earle, yet deſir'd to ſhew mercy, by letting that unfortunate man to end his life in Cloſe Impriſonment*; *but if no leſſe then life can ſatisfie my people, I muſt ſay*, Fiat Juſticia. The Poſtſcript was, *If he muſt die, it were Charity to reprieve him till Saturday.*

The Houſe return'd anſwer, that his requeſt could not poſſibly be admitted without apparent danger to Him, his Wife, and Children.

On Wedneſday the 12 of *May*, he was brought

from the Tower to the ſcaffold on Tower-hill, attended by Biſhop *Uſher*, where he made his laſt Speech to the people, *Proteſting his Innocency in that for which he was condemned, acquitting all the world, and deſired God to forgive them, wiſhing proſperity and happineſſe to the Kingdome, and deſired they would ſeriouſly conſider whether the Reformation of a Kingdome ſhould be written in Letters of blood; much fearing they were in the wrong way; profeſſing he died a true ſonne of the Church of* England, *wherein he was borne, and in which he was bred: addreſſing himſelfe to his brother Sir* George Wentworth, *deſired to be remembred to his Wife and Children, willing him to Charge his Son never to meddle with the patrimony of the Church, for it would prove a Canker to his eſtate; and after a ſhort time ſpent in prayer, he ſubmitted his neck to the Block, which was ſtruck off by the Executioner at one blow.*

There was at that time a diſcovery made of diverſe perſons that had endeavour'd the Earles eſcape out of the Tower, diverſe Gentlemen of worth were engaged in it, but the timely diſcovery prevented its execution.

Upon which the Houſe orderd ſome Lords to be aſſiſtant to the Lievtenant of the Tower for the ſafety of the City.

Severall Great perſons were diſplaced, as, The Earle of *Eſſex* made Lord Chamberlain, in the roome

roome of *Pembroke*; The Marqueſſe of *Hartford* Governour of the Prince, in the roome of the Earle of *Newcaſtle*, Dr *Juxon* Lord Treaſurer, reſigned his Office to five Commiſſioners; The Lord *Cottington* Maſter of the Wards, was diſplaced, and the Office conferd on the Lord *Say*.

In *May* laſt the Parliament to engage the people to ſtick cloſe to them, framed an Oath or Proteſtation, which was by them taken, and ſent through *England* to be taken by the people.

The Parliament being ſecured for their everlaſting ſitting, began to conſider of the raiſing of moneys for the payment and disbanding of the two Armies; much Plate was melted downe; and the Earle of *Holland* was by joynt conſent of King and Parliament order'd to goe downe as Generall to disband the *Engliſh* Army.

The Houſe in *February* following, Voted 300000 *l.* for the *Scots*, and dayes of payment to be appointed.

For the Levying of this money a Bill was brought into the Houſe for Pole-money, *Viz.* a Duke 100 *l.* a Marqueſſe 80 *l.* Earles 60 *l.* Vicounts and Baronets 40 *l.* Knights of the Bath 30 *l.* Knights Bachelours 20. *l.* Eſquires 10 *l.* every Gentleman able to expend 100 *l per annum* 5 *l.* and ſo every one according to their degree, no perſon exempted, every Head paid ſix pence; which Bill with two other were offerd to the

King, one for putting downe the Star-Chamber, another for putting downe the high Commiſſion, at which the King was a little ſtartled.

The Houſe Voted he ſhould ſigne all, or none, which notwithſtanding, he paſt that for Pole-money, and tooke time for the other two, and not long after with much Importunity he paſt them alſo.

Sir *Thomas Roe* was ſent in the quality of an Ambaſſadour to the Emperour, to ſolicite the reſtoration of the Prince Elector, which after much ſtay and nothing effected, he returnes.

The Parliament conſidering the heavy burdens of the Northern Counties, Order 100000 *l.* part of the 300000 *l.* to be paid to the *Scots*; and in *Auguſt* following both Armies were quietly disbanded, and departed to their own homes.

Biſhop *Wren* is committed to the Tower for miſdemeanors amounting to treaſon.

The Judges that gave their opinion for Ship-money are queſtioned, and ſeverall Charges drawne up againſt them.

The King having Inform'd the Houſe of his reſolutions to take a Journey to *Scotland*, on the tenth of *Auguſt* ſet forward out of *London* towards *Scotland*, but that very Morning came to the Houſe and paſt diverſe Bills, and likewiſe ſign'd a Commiſſion for the paſſing of Bills in his abſence, the Commiſſioners appointed were the Lord

Lord Keeper, the Lord Privy Seale, Marqueſſe of *Hartford*, Earle of *Lindſey*, Earle of *Eſſex*, Earle of *Dorcet*, Earle of *Bath*.

He likewiſe ſigned another Bill, conſtituting the Earle of *Eſſex* Generall of all the Forces on this ſide *Trent*, by which he had power in caſe of neceſſity to Levy an Army.

The Parliament adjourned from the eight of *September* till the 20 of *October*, and appointed a ſtanding Committee of fifty Members to act in the Intervall.

The Parliament being adjourn'd, and the King gone to *Scotland*, every one tooke advantage to vent the humour of his own braine; many uſing Irreverend behaviour during the time of divine ſervice, many outrages and riots were committed againſt Clergy-men, and the Prelaticall party (as they cald them) ſtrange and unheard-of practices were uſed, as tub-preaching, and that openly in the ſtreets; which gave occaſion to many ſober minded men to thinke evill of the Parliament, as though it was their contrivance.

During the Kings being in *Scotland*, a Letter was ſent from the *Engliſh*-Committee in *Scotland*, to the ſtanding Committee at *Weſtminſter*, diſcovering a plot againſt the lives of Marqueſſe *Hamilton*, and others the greateſt Peeres in *Scotland*, the Earle of *Craford*, and others, being the Conſpirators: which occaſioned the ſtanding

Committee (to prevent the like here) to appoint ſtrong guards in ſeverall parts of the City, and ſo to continue till the next meeting of both Houſes.

Before the King return'd from *Scotland*, about the end of *October* 1641. brake out the moſt barbarous and inhumane Rebellion in *Ireland*, that ever was heard of in any age of the world. The Innocent Proteſtants turn'd out of their eſtates, and above two hundred thouſand perſons, men, women, and children, moſt barbarouſly and cruelly murdered.

But we will leave *Ireland* weltring in her blood, and look home.

Where in *November* 1641. we find the King return'd from *Scotland*, and was by the City of *London* feaſted, and in Great State conducted to *Hampton* Court, with much ſeeming expreſſions of Joy; ſome few dayes after the King Invites the Aldermen and principall Citizens to *Hampton* Court, where they were ſumptuouſly feaſted, and diverſe Aldermen were Knighted.

During the Kings reſiding at *Hampton* Court, the Commons preſent the King a Remonſtrance of the ſtate of the Kingdome, with a large recitall of all the Grievances and oppreſſions that the people had groaned under ſince the beginning of his Raigne. Upon which within few dayes the King publiſhed a Declaration in anſwer

ſwer to their Remonſtrance.

And now began viſibly to appeare the ſad breach betwixt the King and his Parliament, which did daily increaſe, untill the Kingdome was involved in a ſad war.

Great endeavours are uſed to ſtir up the Common people with a diſlike of the Kings actions, to which purpoſe freedome was given to every party without contradiction, to write and publiſh many bitter and Invective Pamphlets againſt the Biſhops, and their Government, and all the ill actions of the Kings Miniſters were laid upon him, and not content with that, they came downe in Great multitudes to *Weſtminſter*, and by the way gave uncivill and threatning Language to diverſe Gentlemen at *Whitehall*-Gate.

Which cauſed the King to ſend to the Lord Major to ſummon a Common Councell, to receive his pleaſure, which by the Chancelour of the Dutchy, he declares his utter diſlike of the numerous multitude coming in that rude manner, and deſires care may be taken to prevent the like for the future, aſſuring them of his care and protection.

And the ſame day the King ſent to the City, the Commons Petition for a Guard to defend them from a malignant party now prevalent; which Petition the King denied, promiſing them in the word of a King, *That his care for their*

ſecurity ſhould be as great as for his wife and children, and if that would not ſerve their turne, he would appoint a Guard of ſuch as he would be anſwerable to God for.

Proclamation was made againſt the *Iriſh* Rebells, and the King deſires the two Houſes to enter into Debate concerning reliefe, and propoſes, that 10000 Volunteers be raiſed and ſent over, if the Commons will pay them.

The King being inform'd of a deſigne carried on by diverſe Members of the Houſe of Commons, which held Intelligence with the *Scots*, endeavouring to ſubvert his Authority; and the better to carry on their deſignes, countenanced the Tumults in the City, cauſes Sir *William Killigrew* and Sir *William Fleming*, to goe to the Chambers and Studies of diverſe Members of the Houſe of Commons, to ſeale up their Trunkes, and to ſeize on their papers, as the Lord *Kimbolton*, Mr *Pim*, Mr *Hamden*, Mr *Denzill Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Haſelrig*, and Mr *Stroud*, but none of their perſons could be met with: they preſently make report to the Houſe, who immediatly Vote it a breach of the priviledge of Parliament, and that it ſhall be lawfull to make reſiſtance, and to require the ayde of a Conſtable to keepe ſuch perſons endeavouring to ſeize on any member, till the further pleaſure of the Houſe.

On the third of *Jan.* the King ſent his Attorney

ney Sir *Edward Herbert* to demand the five Members, and ſent a Sergeant at Armes to charge them with Articles of high treaſon, and with them the Lord *Mandevill*, the Earle of *Mancheſters* ſecond ſon; which Articles were theſe.

1. *They endeavoured to ſubvert the Government, to deprive the King of his Legall power, to place on the ſubjects an Arbitrary and tyrannicall Power.*

2. *They had endeavoured by foule aſperſions upon his Majeſties Government, to alienate the affections of his people from him.*

3. *That they endeavoured to draw his Army from his obedience, to ſide with them in traiterous deſignes.*

4. *That they traiterouſly invited and encouraged a forraine Power to invade his Majeſties Kingdome of* England.

5. *That they had traiterouſly endeavoured to ſubvert the very rights and beings of Parliaments.*

6. *That they had endeavoured by force and terrour to compell the Parliament to joyne with them in their traiterous deſignes, and to that end have actually rayſed and countenanced*

nanced tumults againſt the King and Parliament.

7. *That they traiterouſly conſpir'd to Levy, and actually have Levied war againſt the King.*

The 4th of *January* 1641. The King attended with diverſe Gentlemen came to the Houſe-door, he onely enter'd the Houſe of Commons, ſeating himſelfe in the Speakers Chaire, demands five Members of that Houſe to be delivered to him; Their names were Sir *Arthur Haſelrig*, Mr. *Denzill Hollis*, Mr. *Pim*, Mr. *Hamden*, Mr. *Stroud*. The King finding they were not there (for they were abſent by appointment of the Houſe) riſes from the Speakers Chaire, and tells them *he was very ſorry for that occaſion, and that no King ever was, nor ſhould be more carefull to preſerve the priviledges of Parliament then he ſhould be, that thoſe five Members were dangerous men, he proteſted in the word of a King, that he never intended any force, but to proceed againſt them in a Legall way; he expected they would ſend them ſo ſoone as they came into the Houſe.*

The King is no ſooner gone out of the Houſe, but they are in a great confuſion, crying out, Priviledge, priviledge; and the next day Voted the Kings coming to the Houſe a breach of the priviledge of Parliament.

The

The King made Proclamation the next day for their apprehenſion, which the day following the Commons Voted illegall and ſcandalous.

The day after he had been at the Houſe, he went in his Coach to *London*, being inform'd they were fled thither, where all the way as he went, the Citizens and others flock'd about his Coach, deſiring him not to Infringe the priviledge of Parliament: Upon his returne one *Walker* flung into the Kings Coach a ſeditious pamphlet, entituled, *To your Tents O Iſrael*; for which he was apprehended.

The Gentlemen of the Inns of Court, offered their ſervice to the King as a Guard; a ſmal Court of Guard is built at *White*-Hall-Gate, and ſome Gentlemen entertained: Within two dayes after a great multitude came out of *London* in their accuſtomed manner, to Petition againſt Biſhops, and in their paſſage by *White*-Hall uſing menacing tearmes, which the Gentlemen not brooking, ſome ſmall miſchiefe was done.

At *Weſtminſter* they offered violence to diverſe Biſhops, which cauſ'd 14 of them to draw up a Proteſt againſt the proceedings of the Houſe.

The Commons reſent it ill, and Vote them Guilty of High Treaſon.

The City Petition the King concerning the putting of perſons of Honour out of the Tower, and

and placing others in their roomes; and of the Great preparations in the Tower, of the fortifying *White*-Hall, and withall deſire, that the five Members may not be reſtrain'd, nor proceeded againſt, but by conſent of the Houſe; to all which his Majeſty gave an anſwer.

Two thouſand Petitioners came out of *Buckingham-ſhire* to Petition the King in the behalfe of Mr. *Hamden*, their Country-man, deſiring that he and the reſt of the five Members may injoy the Priviledges of Parliament; which moved the King to ſend to the Parliament, that for the preſent he would wave his proceedings againſt the five Members.

The multitude not being content with the deſtruction of Biſhops, they openly demand the Liturgy of the Church to be aboliſhed, condemning the uſe of all ſet-formes of prayer.

The Pulpits every where ſounded aloud that now was the time that the *Iſraelites* ſhould plunder the *Egyptians*, and that the Juſt ſhould waſh their footſteps in the blood of the ungodly; and publickly exhorted the people, to take up armes againſt the Kings Evill Councell (as they calld it) and to deſtroy all ſuch as joyned with them: and to this effect theſe following Texts of Scripture were preſſed by the zealous Miniſters, *Luke* 19. 27. *Thoſe mine enemies that would not that I ſhould Raigne over them, bring hither and ſlay before*

fore me. Judges 5. 23. *Curſe ye Meroz, Curſe ye bitterly the Inhabitants thereof, becauſe they came not to help the Lord againſt the Mighty.* Jer. 48. 10. *Curſed be he that doth the work of the Lord deceitfully; and curſed be he that keepeth back his ſword from blood.* Thus there was no way for Reformation in theſe mens accounts, but to pluck up and to deſtroy, and all for the Love of God, and for the advancement of the Kingdome of Jeſus Chriſt.

The great multitudes ſtill reſorting to *Weſtminſter* every day, cauſed the King for his own ſafety to repaire to *Hampton* Court, with the Queen and Prince, for which by many good men he was much blamed.

The next day after the King went to *Hampton* Court, many Citizens, with a great company of boats, with Guns and flags, Guard the five Members, in Triumph, to *Weſtminſter*; which gave occaſion to the King to diſlike the City.

The Houſe of Commons Petition the King for the Militia; To which he gives a ſpeedy anſwer, though not ſatisfying to them.

They likewiſe Petition that the five Members may be eſtated and cleared of that Imputation of Treaſon; To which he anſwered, *That he had ground and proofe enough to accuſe them, but he is willing to forbeare proſecution; if that will not doe, to ſatisfie the people, he will paſs a free and Generall pardon, as they ſhall think fit.* The

The King after he had been at *Hampton* Court ſome ſmall time, ſends for the Earle of *Eſſex*, then Lord Chamberlain, and the Earle of *Holland*, Groom of the Stoole to attend him; but they refuſed, rather chooſing to obey his Writ; upon which he ſends a Meſſenger for the Staffe and Key, the Enſignes of their Office, which they willingly reſign'd.

The Queen having receiv'd a Meſſage from both Houſes by the Earle of *Newport* and the Lord *Seamor*, that they intended to charge her with Treaſon.

She anſwered, ſhe never ſaw any Articles in writing, and therefore gave little credit, and ſhe hop'd they would lay no aſperſions upon her that never miſtruſted the actions of one ſingle perſon, much leſſe the whole Houſe, and that ſhe ever wiſht a happy and right underſtanding betwixt the King and his people.

In *February* the King and Queen went to *Canterbury*, and ſo to *Dover*, with the Princeſs *Mary*, wife to the Prince of *Orange*. The Queen went along with her into *Holland*; and ſome affirme, carried the choiceſt Jewells of the Crown with her to pawn.

During the Kings ſtay at *Canterbury*, he ſigned the Bill to take away Biſhops Votes in Parliament.

The King came back to *Greenwich*, and ſends for

for the Duke of *York* to attend him in his going to *York*, where he intended to reſide.

From *Greenwich* he removes to *Theobalds*, where he is preſented with a Petition for the Militia, and likewiſe to reſide neer *London*, and not to take his Son with him. *The King refuſed to give any other anſwer to the Militia, then what he had already done; and that he ſhould take ſuch care of his Son, as ſhould juſtifie him to God as a Father, and to his Dominions as a King, and that he conceiv'd himſelfe not ſafe neer London.*

The Houſe immediatly Vote, *That his Majeſties anſwer was a flat deniall*, and likewiſe Order *The Earle of Northumberland, Lord High Admirall, to take care for the providing and rigging of the Royall Navy for the ſervice of the Kingdome.*

The Houſe ſeeing they could not prevaile with the King for the Militia, paſt an Order for ſetling the Militia throughout *England* and *Wales* in confiding perſons hands.

From *Huntingdon* the King ſent a Meſſage to both Houſes, ſhewing the Grounds and Reaſons of his removall to *York*, deſiring them to Expedite the neceſſary ſupplyes for *Ireland*, and forbids them by any pretence of Order or Ordinance to meddle with the Militia, or to doe or execute any thing againſt Law, he being tyed up by the Law as well as his ſubjects, and muſt obey.

bey. Upon which the Houſe drew up a Declaration of their utter diſlike of his proceedings.

The King at *Stamford* puts forth a Proclamation for putting in execution the Laws againſt Papiſts.

And being at *York* puts forth a Proclamation for *Tunage* and *Poundage*.

The eight of *Aprill* 1642. the King ſends a meſſage to both Houſes, declaring his Intentions to goe himſelfe in perſon to chaſtize the bloody rebells, and that he intended to raiſe forthwith by Commiſſion a Guard for his own perſon, conſiſting of 2000 foote and 200 horſe, and to arme them from his Magazine at *Hull*.

Upon which the Houſes Petition to remove the Magazine from *Hull*.

The Gentry, Miniſters, and Freeholders of the County of *York*, Petition the King, to which his Majeſty gives a ſpeedy and gracious anſwer.

The Houſe again Petitions, that (the Magazine at the Tower of *London* being much drained) that from *Hull* may be brought up; to which his Majeſty anſwered, *That for the Charge of Looking to the Magazine at Hull, as it was by them at firſt voluntarily undertaken, though unneceſſarily, yet you may free our good people of that Charge, and leave it to Us to look to, who are the proper owners of it.*

The Parliament, though they could not prevaile

vaile by Intreaty, resolve to doe it by policy, for they had sent to keep out the Earle of *Newcastle*, and committed the Towne and Fort to a faithfull Friend of theirs, Sir *John Hotham*.

The County of *York* petition the King, that the Magazine may remaine there for the security of the Northerne Countyes; and during the Contests, the Parliament went on might and maine, setling the Militia in many Countyes; and by Reason the Earle of *Northumberland* was indisposed in health, and could not attend the Sea-service, they petition that the Earle of *Warwick* may be Admirall.

The King utterly refuses the Earle of *Warwick*, yet notwithstanding the Earle of *Warwick* being Encouraged by some Votes of the House, though with some opposition, got possession of most part of the Navy.

The King attended by many of the Nobility, a great number of Gentlemen, and some Souldiers, came before the walls of *Hull*, but found the Gates shut, and the Bridges drawne up by the Command of Sir *John Hotham*, a Member of the Commons House.

Sir *John Hotham* appeared on the wall, Kneelling downe, Intreating his Majesty *not to command that, which he must be inforc't at that time to deny, and that he could not admit him in, without breach of trust to the Parliament, craving leave that he*

might have time to acquaint the Parliament. The King being very wroth, desired to know *if he had any Order in writing, expresly to deny his entrance:* And after some houres stay, Proclaimed Sir *John Hotham* a Traytor, after he had received The Duke of *York* and the Prince Elector out of the Town, who had been there one day.

The King forthwith sends a Message to the Parliament, accusing *Hotham* for a traytor; and likewise sent a Letter to the Mayor of *Hull*, to take care that no part of the Magazine should be conveyd away without his consent: there were Scouts appointed to Intercept all Letters between *London* and *Hull*; and a Letter accordingly was Intercepted going from the Parliament to *Hull*, giving encouragement to Sir *John* to continue firme, nothing doubting but they would stick by him.

The House being Informed of the Intercepting of their Letter, Voted it *a high breach of the priviledge of Parliament; and that what Sir* John *had done, was in obedience to that House; and that the proclaiming him a traytor without due process of Law, is a breach of their priviledge, against the Laws of the Land, and the liberty of the subject.*

They likewise past an Order to prevent the Levying any Souldiers in *Yorkshire*, or *Lincolnshire*, to force a passage into the Towne of *Hull*; and the more to enrage the King, *Hotham* is ordred

dred to Levy The trained bands, which being come into the Towne, he disarmes and dismisses them.

There was a select Committee appointed to goe to *Hull*, with Instructions for the safety of the Counties of *York* and *Lincoln*, to whom all Sheriffs, Justices of the peace, Constables, and other Officers, are requir'd to be ayding and assisting.

Things began to grow very high; The King summons the Gentry of the County of *York*, where he gave them a large account of all the messages and replyes touching *Hull*, and the Reasons why he did not signe the Bill for the Militia. To be short, *You see my Magazine is going to be taken from me directly against my Will; The Militia against the Law (and my consent) is going to be put in execution; and lastly, Sir* John Hothams *Treason is countenanced; all which being considered, none can blame me to apprehend dangers, and upon this reall Ground to tell you, that I am resolv'd to have a Guard onely to secure my person; In which I desire your assistance, that I may be able to protect you, the Laws, and the true Protestant Religion from any affront or Injury.*

Which speech was by them received with great affection.

The Parliament being inform'd of the Kings Speech to the *Yorkshire* Gentry, declare *that it is*

againſt the Laws and liberties of the Kingdome, that any of the ſubjects thereof ſhould be commanded by the King to attend him at his pleaſure, and that whoſoever upon pretence of his Majeſties command ſhall take up Armes in a warlike manner, ſhall be eſteemed diſturbers of the peace, and to be proceeded againſt accordingly: and likewiſe ſigned an Order to the Sheriffe of that County, to take care to ſuppreſſe the raiſing of the trained bands upon the Kings Command.

But the Parliament Iſſue out Commiſſions to all parts of the Kingdome, appointing certain dayes for all the trained bands to be exerciſed in each County; and that ſeverall Members be ſent into the ſeverall Counties to ſee the Commiſſions put in execution, and all the Magazines in the ſeverall Counties to be put into the hands of their confiding friends.

Which Commiſſions were anſwered by Proclamation from the King, forbidding the trained bands and all others to riſe or muſter, on pretence of any Ordinance of Parliament, without his conſent.

The breach was now growne wide; the Parliament ſtill oppoſing and thwarting the King on all occaſions, moved diverſe of the Members to deſert it, and repaire to the King, ſo that in a ſmall time, the Lords at *York* were more in number then thoſe at *Weſtminſter.*

The

The names of thoſe that went, were, the Marqueſſe of *Hartford*, the Earle of *Lindſey*, *Cumberland*, *Huntington*, *Bath*, *Southampton*, *Dorſet*, *Salisbury*, who preſently return'd, *Northampton*, *Devonſhire*, *Briſtoll*, *Weſtmerland*, *Barkſhire*, *Munmouth*, *Rivers*, *Newcaſtle*, *Dover*, *Carnarvan*, *Newport*, the Lord *Howard*, *Charlton*, *Newwark*, *Pawlet*, *Paget*, *Matreverſe*, *Willowby*, *Rich*, *Fawconbridge*, *Chandois*, *Coventry*, *Loveleſſe*, *Savill*, *Seymor*, *Mohune*, *Dunſmore*, Lord *Capell*, *Gray* of *Ruthen*; Together with above fifty of the Commons Houſe, whoſe departure ſtartled the active men of the Houſe, who notwithſtanding having gone ſo far, proceed and Vote, *That it appeares that the King being ſeduced by evill Councell, Intends to make war againſt the Parliament, and that when he doth, it is a breach of truſt repoſed in him; and likewiſe that whoſoever ſhall ayd or aſſiſt him in the ſaid war, are traytors by the fundamental Laws of the Kingdome.*

And on the 30 of *May* by Vote ſummon nine of thoſe Lords that went, to returne, but they utterly refuſed, which the Houſe deemed a ſleighting of them, which occaſioned Mr. *Hollis* after a long Speech to Impeach them of high treaſon, which the Peeres afterwards confirm'd, in Voting them *never to ſit in the Houſe more, and to be uncapable of any privilędge of Parliament.*

And not long after the Lord Keeper *Littleton*, ſent away the Great Seale to the King, and immediately followed it, which put the Houſe to a great plunge for the preſent.

In *June* 1642. The two Houſes ſent a Petition with 19 Propoſitions to the King, to which he return'd a ſmart anſwer, taxing them, *that they had contrary to law preſſed their Ordinances on the people, wreſted from him the command of the Militia, countenanced the Treaſon of* Hotham, *and had directed to the people Invectives againſt his Government, aſperſt him with the favouring of Papiſts; and with an utter diſlike of the Propoſitions, proteſted, that if he were vanquiſht and a priſoner, in worſe condition then any the moſt unfortunate of his predeceſſors had ever been reduced unto, he would never ſtoop ſo low as to Grant thoſe demands, and to make himſelfe of a King of* England, *a Duke of* Venice.

And now both ſides prepare for war: The Parliament the 10 of *June* 1642. paſt an Order for bringing in money and plate to maintaine horſe and foote for defence of the publick peace, for which they did engage the publick faith.

The King on the other ſide receives advice by Letters from *Amſterdam* of a conſiderable quantity of Armes and Ammunition, which was provided upon ſome Jewells pawned by the Queen; he likewiſe ſends Commiſſions of *Array*, with Letters

Letters to the Lieutenants of the ſeverall Counties, making uſe of the Parliaments Vote, and declares, *That the Kingdome being in danger of Enemies abroad, and a Popiſh party at home, it is neceſſary to put the people in a poſture of defence, that you immediately cauſe to be reſtored all the ancient trained bands, and free-hold bands, and to appoint Collonells and Captaines, and other Officers, to command them.*

The Parliament Vote the Commiſſion to be againſt Law, and the actors therein, to be eſteemed diſturbers of the peace.

Whereupon the King ſummons the Lords of the Councell, with the reſt of the Nobility at *York*, and declares *that he requires no obedience of them, but what ſhall be according to law, and requires them to yeeld to no commands Illegally Impoſed by any other, and that he will not Ingage them in any war againſt the Parliament, except for neceſſary defence againſt ſuch as ſhall Invade him or them*; Upon which, with unanimous conſent, they all freely engag'd to him their duty and allegiance.

The King ſends a Letter to the Lord Mayor of *London*, Aldermen and Sheriffes, forbidding any contribution of money and plate toward the raiſing of any Armies whatſoever for the Parliament.

By this time the Armes were arrived from *Holland*,

land, but the King wanted men to weild them, yet by his Speeches and Declarations, had gained the affections of many of his people, and a conſiderable number was got together; and from *Beverly* he ſends a Meſſage and Proclamation to the Parliament, of his Intentions to goe againſt *Hull*, requiring it might be delivered up to him, which they anſwer'd with a Petition, moving him to accord with his two Houſes; they likewiſe ſet out a Declaration for the ſafety of *Hull*, promiſing ſatisfaction for all damages ſuſtained.

On the 11 of *June* 1642. The Parliament Vote that an Army ſhall be raiſed for the defence of King and Parliament, and the Earle of *Eſſex* to be Generall.

The King according to his former Intentions, with an Army of 3000 foote and 1000 horſe, Intends to beſiege *Hull* by Land, and made Proclamation that none on paine of death carry any proviſions into *Hull*.

Hotham being Inform'd of the Kings advance, ſummons a Councell of War, which reſolve to hold the King play with their Ordinance, till the tide came in, and then to draw up their ſluces, which accordingly was performed with much damage to the Kings Souldiers.

Hotham likewiſe ſends to the Parliament, requiring 500 men for the ſafety of the Towne, and proviſions.

Upon

Upon which by command of the Parliament, Drums are beaten up in *London*, and other adjacent Counties, for Volunteers to goe immediatly to *Hull*, and within a week 500 men and more were ſent by Sea under the Command of Sir *John Meldram*, to aſſiſt Sir *John Hotham*.

The King calls a Councell, and reſolves to break up the ſiege.

By this time the Earle of *Warwick* was poſſeſt of moſt of the Fleete for the ſervice of the Parliament, and they were in a conſiderable way to raiſe an Army, by the aſſiſtance of that maſs of money and plate that was brought in, for it is almoſt Incredible with what zeale and affection (by the Miniſters perſwaſions) the people were willing to be rid of their Treaſure, every one vying who ſhould contribute moſt; nay the women and maidens ſpared not their Rings, Thimbles and Bodkins, for the advancement of the cauſe.

The Earle of *Eſſex* with much prudence raiſeth a conſiderable body of horſe and foote. The Earle of *Bedford* was Voted to be Generall of the Horſe.

Collonell *Goring*, eldeſt Son to the Lord *Goring*, was ſent down to *Portſmouth* by the Parliament; but ſuddenly he declares for the King.

The King being return'd to *York*, ſummons the Gentry, and requires their aſſiſtance for the raiſing of a Regiment for the Princes Guard, to be com-

commanded by the Earle of *Cumberland*.

The Parliament declare againſt the Commiſſion of *Array*, & Vote it Illegall: on the other ſide, the King being Inform'd of the Earle of *Eſſex* his raiſing an Army, proclaimes him a Rebell and a Traytor to the King and his Crowne, and that all Collonells and other Officers under his Command, that ſhall not Inſtantly lay downe their Armes, are Guilty of High Treaſon. And likewiſe Commands the Marqueſſe of *Hartford*, to raiſe what Forces he could to ſuppreſſe him.

Great was the Conteſt almoſt in every County, betwixt the Parliament Commiſſioners, and the Commiſſioners of *Array*. In ſome Counties the Kings party prevailed, in others the Parliaments. *London* the Great Metropolis was not exempted; for Sir *Richard Gurney*, then Lord Major was committed to the Tower, for cauſing the Kings Commiſſion of *Array* to be read, and was by the Lords deprived of his Majoralty, never to beare Office in City or Common-wealth, and to continue priſoner during the pleaſure of the Houſe.

The King being at *York* publiſheth a Grand Declaration of all the proceedings from the beginning of this Parliament to this preſent time, concluding with a ſolemn Proteſtation of his affections to Parliaments, and the peace and happineſs of the Kingdome; and within few dayes ſends

a Meſſage to the Parliament, taxing them with borrowing 100000 *l.* out of the Adventures money for the reliefe of *Ireland*; to which they returne a ſpeedy anſwer.

The King in perſon moveth from place to place; On the 22 of *July* he made a Speech to the Gentry in *Leiceſterſhire*; on the 4th of *Auguſt*, to the Gentry in *Yorkſhire*; and that war might not want its ſolemnity, on the 20 of *Auguſt*, he ſets up his Standard Royall at *Nottingham*, and by Proclamation requires the ayd and aſſiſtance of all his ſubjects on the North ſide *Trent*, and within twenty miles Southward thereof, for his juſt defence; and that whoſoever ſhall ſupply him with money and plate, he (as God ſhall enable him) will repay and reward, according to the meaſure of their love and affection to him and their Country.

On the 25 of *Auguſt* 1642. from *Nottingham* the King ſends a Meſſage to both Houſes, by the Earles of *Southampton* and *Dorſet*, and Sir *John Culpepper*, for a treaty of peace; and *that an equall number may be choſen to meet where they ſhould appoint, that there may, if poſſible, be an accommodation, out of a deep ſenſe of the Calamities that attend the Kingdome.* To which they anſwer, *That untill he recalls that Proclamation which proclaimes them Rebells, and takes down his Standard, they will by no meanes heare of it:* To which he replyes,

plyes, *That to remove all ſcruples that may hinder the Treaty, by him ſo much deſired, ſo that a day be appointed by the Parliament for revoking their Declarations againſt all perſons as traytors aſſiſting him, he will with all chearfulneſs on the ſame day recall his Proclamations, and take down his Standard; and likewiſe promiſed to grant any thing that ſhould be for the good of his ſubjects, aſſuring them that his greateſt deſire was to get a right underſtanding.*

To which they humbly anſwer and petition, *that his Majeſty would take down his Standard, withdraw his Declarations, and leave his Forces, and returne to the Parliament, and receive their faithfull advice, of whoſe reall affection he need not to doubt.*

Within few dayes the King ſends a ſecond reply, *That he could neither doe nor offer any more then he had already, and that he ſhould think himſelfe cleare from any blood that might be ſpilt in this quarrell.*

The Parliament give encouragement to the well affected, that what moneys they ſhould lend, ſhould be ſatisfied out of Delinquents eſtates; and declare, that whoſoever ſhall returne from the King to the Parliament within ten dayes ſhall be pardoned, excepting the Duke of *Richmond*, the Earles of *Newcaſtle*, *Cumberland*, *Briſtoll*, *Rivers*, and *Carnarvan*, Mr. *Edward Hide*, *Endimion*

dimion Porter, Secretary *Nicholas*, Vicount *Newwark*, Vicount *Haltland*.

The Parliament being Inform'd that the Queen was ſoliciting the States of *Holland* to contribute Armes and Ammunition for the King, ſend Mr. *Walter Strickland*, a Member of the Houſe, over into *Holland*, with Credentiall Letters. They likewiſe drew up a Declaration to the States of *Holland* to ſatisfie them of their whole proceedings.

Prince *Rupert* and Prince *Maurice* in *September* arrive in *England*, and offer their ſervice to their Uncle, who were immediatly put into Command.

Prince *Rupert* with a ſmall body of Horſe flew up and downe through diverſe Counties, and gained a conſiderable body together.

The King himſelf moves, though with a ſlower pace, and had gotten a great number together, marches to *Shrewsbury* (a place of great concernment, as being the Inlet to *Wales*) where he orders a Mint to melt down the plate, which was largely contributed by the Gentry, and offers the Crowne Lands in Morgage to eaſe the Country of the burthen of taxes and free Quarter.

The Earle of *Lindſey* is choſen Generall for the King, and the Generall Rendevouz of his Forces was appointed at *York*.

The Earle of *Eſſex* Generall for the Parliament,

ment, appointed a Rendevouz of all the Parliament Forces at *Northampton*, being about 20000 Horſe and foote, who gave ſtrict Charge to reſtraine all prophaneſs and diſorders in their Army.

He divided his Army into ſeverall bodyes, to prevent the Roving of Prince *Rupert*, and to find out the King: from *Northampton* he marches to *Coventry*, thence to *Warwick*.

Worceſter was poſſeſt by Sir *John Byron*: a skirmiſh happened betwixt Prince *Rupert*, and Mr. *Fines*, Collonell *Sands*, Captain *Hales*, and others. Thus, the Prince came out of *Worceſter* into a greene Meadow, reſolv'd to fight thoſe he could firſt meete withall; The paſſage to the Meadow was narrow; Collonell *Sands* being over-valiant Charg'd with his Regiment before the reſt could come up; both ſides being equall in number, fought with Great reſolution, but the Prince fearing the Generalls approach, retired into *Worceſter*, though with ſome loſs in the Reare, being purſued through the Towne by the Parliaments Forces: Collonell *Sands*, and Sergeant Major *Duglaas* were ſlaine at the firſt Charge. There was found dead in all thirteen perſons.

The Prince marcht immediately to *Ludlow*, and the King with ſome horſe marcheth into *Wales*, and made a Speech full of proteſtations

to

to the Gentry of *Denbighſhire* and *Flintſhire*, and returnes to *Shrewsbury*, where his ſtrength much increaſed, being 16000 foote, and 5000 Horſe and Dragoones.

Both Armies think of providing winter Quarters; Collonell *Eſſex*, with two Regiments of foote, is appointed Governour of *Gloceſter*, but not long after was order'd to *Briſtoll*. The towne being divided, and hearing of his coming, began to mutiny, but he had a party which opened the gates to him in the night, and ſurpriz'd the Mutiners.

Upon *Eſſex* Removall from *Gloceſter*, Collonell *Maſſey* was appointed Governour.

The Earle of *Eſſex* ſends horſe and foote to the Lord *Wharton*, to make a body, to prevent the *Cavaliers* going to *Wollverhampton*.

The King being at *Shrewsbury*, ſummons the County to bring horſe and carts for his removall, who marches neer *Coventry*, and that night lay at *Southam*.

The King ſo exceedingly increaſed in ſtrength, that he cauſed feare in thoſe at *London*, who order all the trained bands of *London*, and the adjacent Counties, to be in readineſs, and to ſet up Poſts and Chaines in all the paſſages into the City, and order twelve Companies out of *London* for the ſecurity of *Windſor* Caſtle.

The Parliament Vote that it was and ſhould be law-

lawfull for all Counties in *England* to enter into a mutuall assosiation, for the defence each of other.

The danger that the Parliament apprehended was reall, for the King had gotten between the Earle of *Essex* and *London*, and they conjectur'd it more fesable for him to attempt *London*, then fight the Army.

Yorkshire at that time abounded with *Cavaliers*, commanded by the Earle of *Cumberland*, Sir *Francis Wortley*, Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*, and Sir *Thomas Glenham*.

In *Cornwall* there was a considerable strength for the King, who were commanded by Sir *Ralph Hopton*.

In *Wales* they began to body, besides the Army the King Commanded, and a great body of horse commanded by Prince *Rupert*.

The King with an Army of 14000 foote and 4000 Horse and Dragoones came on Saturday the 22 of *October* within six miles of *Keynton*, and quarter'd his Army at *Crepeda* and *Edghill*.

The Earle of *Essex* quarter'd at *Keinton* with his Army.

On Sunday the 28. both Armies draw up in a body. The King having the advantage of a high hill, called *Edg-Hill*, at the foote of which was a vale, call'd the *Vale of the red horse*, where *Essex* his Army was drawne up upon a Rising Ground,

in

in Battalia three Regiments of horſe on the right wing, commanded by Sir *Philip Stapleton*, Sir *William Belford*, and the Lord *Fielding*, Sir *John Meldram* commanded the Van; the Generall, Collonell *Hollis*, and the Lord *Brooks*, in the Reare; on the left wing twenty Troops of Horſe commanded by Sir *James Ramſey*.

The Earle of *Lindſey* was Generall for the King, but the Battle was ordered by the Lord *Ruthen* Earle of *Forth*. The Generall on foot led on the maine body of the Army with a pike in his hand.

The Earle of *Eſſex* ſhewed perſonall Valour, till he was diſwaded not to expoſe himſelfe to danger, and ſo retir'd to the body.

The forlorn on the Kings ſide was commanded by Major *Backſtake* and Captain *Hamond*, who being come down to the bottom of the hill, charg'd the Parliaments Forlorn, which was no ſooner done, but the Kings Canons began to play.

Prince *Rupert*, Generall of the Horſe, Commanded the Right wing, Charg'd furiouſly the Left wing of *Eſſex* his Army, and Routed them, purſuing them to *Keinton* Towne, took the Carriages, the Earles Waggons, and Cloak-bag, being too eager of the plunder.

The Earle of *Lindſey* being too adventurous was kil'd, and by reaſon of the abſence of Prince

Rupert, the main body of the Kings was assaulted with great fury, and his Standard taken (Sir *Edmund Varney* the Standard-bearer being kil'd) which was afterwards retaken, by an unknown person, and convey'd away.

The foot on both sides Charge with equall Valour, untill the night came on, which parted the fight.

Both Armies continue in the field all night, and the next day the King made Proclamation of pardon to such as would lay down their armes and submit. The Victory was much disputed, both sides returning thanks to God for Victory. Indeed there was reall signs of Victory on both sides, by the taking of Colours and Canons of equall number. And although the Parliament lost more men, yet the King lost more men of quality. The number of the slain was computed to be between five and six thousand.

The Kings Army drew off toward *Keinton*, and the Earl of *Essex* withdrew toward *Warwick*.

In Examining the Earl of *Essex* his Cabinet they discover'd one *Blake* that attended the King to be Treacherous, by holding a Correspondency, who was immediatly condemn'd by a Councel of War, and hang'd in the high way.

On the Parliaments side were slain of note, the Lord St *John*, Collonell *Ch. Essex*, Lieutenant Collonell *Ramsey*. The

The Parliament take care to recruite their Army by giving Liberty to apprentices to serve their time in the war, which occasion'd very many to leave their trades, and repair thither.

They likewise solicite the *Scots* to raise an Army for their own defence.

The King on the other side sends a Declaration to his Councell in *Scotland*, Stating the quarrell betwixt him and his Parliament, requiring their assistance.

The King and Prince *Rupert* repair neer *London* with a flying Army, which occasioned the Parliament to provide for their owne safety.

The Earle of *Essex* likewise drew neer to the City, quartering his men at *Acton*, and the places adjoyning.

The Kings Artillery with some Troops of Horse, advance from *Colebrooke* to *Branford*, eight miles from *London*, fell upon Collonell *Hollis* his men, which quarter'd there, but the Lord *Brooks* and Collonell *Hamdens* Regiments came speedily to their relieſe, and for a time maintained a bloody fight.

The Earl of *Essex* was sitting in the House when the news was brought, who immediatly horst, and with what strength he could, hastens to meet the King, but night approaching, the King retired.

All that night vast numbers of Souldiers flockt from the City, above three times the number of the Kings Army, and they had hem'd him in on every side, had not *Kingston* bridge been left destitute, over which the Kings Traine of Artillery was drawne, whilst a body of Horse faced the Enemy, and then retired toward *Oxford*.

The Parliament orders the Generall to follow him, and fight him.

The Kings Forces in the North under the Command of the Earle of *Newcastle*, and the Earle of *Cumberland*, being 8000 Horse and foote, were too potent for the Lord *Fairfax*, Lieutenant for the Parliament. The Earle marches to *Tadcaster*, where the Lord *Fairfax*, and Captain *Hotham* were fell on the Towne, and forc't the Lord *Fairfax* with some loss to quit the Town, and march to *Cawood* and *Selby* for supplies for his Army. Sir *Thomas Fairfax* is sent to *Leeds* with divers Troops of Horse but was forc't to retire.

In *December*, *Goring* with Armes, money, and eighty old Commanders, with the Queens Standard, arrives from *Holland*, and joynes with the Earle of *Newcastle*.

The Counties of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, *Cambridge*, *Hartford*, *Essex*, associate, and the Lord *Gray* of *Wark* is appointed Major Generall over them.

The Parliaments Forces possesse themselves of *Winchester* and *Chichester*.

The

The Parliament ſend Propoſitions to *Oxford* by four Lords and eight Commoners; To which the King returns a ſpeedy anſwer.

The Queen arrives the 16 of *Feb.* 1642. and brings over Arms, mony, and Ammunition with her from *Holland.* The Earle of *Montroſſe*, and the Lord *Ogle* preſent their ſervice to her at *York*, with two Troops of Horſe, which ſhe afterward made up a conſiderable body.

The Earl of *Eſſex* in the Spring mareht forth of his winter quarters, reſolving to beſiege *Redding*, which was poſſeſt by the Kings Forces, in it was 3000 Souldiers, and twenty pieces of Ordinance; The Generall ſits downe before it in *Aprill* 1643. with an Army of 16000 foot and 3000 Horſe, which after ſixteen dayes, was delivered upon eaſie conditions by the Deputy Governour Collonell *Fielding*, Sir *Arthur Aſton* the Governour being indiſpoſed by reaſon of his wounds.

At *Cirenciſter* was the moſt conſiderable party for rhe Parliament in all thoſe parts; Prince *Rupert* with a conſiderable Army marches againſt it, the Towne not being fortified, he fals on with a furious aſſault, which at firſt was Gallantly received, but after two houres diſpute poſſeſt himſelfe of the Towne, the moſt part of the Earle of *Stamfords* Regiment being cut off, ſeized a conſiderable Magazine with above 3000 Armes,

and eleven hundred persons, which were conveyed to *Oxford*.

Immediatly he faces *Glocester*, summons the City; to which *Massey* Replyed, *That he kept the City for King and Parliament, and would not deliver it to any forreign Prince.*

The Army in *Wales* raised for the King, advance toward *Glocester*, and in their march, fall on a regiment of Collonell *Burroughs*, which they rowt, divers Officers being slain, took fifty prisoners and so march on to *Glocester*.

News was brought to the Parliament of a considerable defeat given to their forces in *Devonshire*, and that Prince *Maurice*, and the Marquesse of *Hartford* had Intentions to secure all the West for the King.

And not long after there was a discovery made for the betraying of *Bristoll*, but by timely notice it was prevented, and the Conspirators executed.

Likewise a discovery was made in *London* of a plot to settle the Kings Commission of *Array*, for which Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Chaloner* were both Executed.

The Lord *Brooks* a very active man for the Parliament, being in *Staffordshire* with his Forces, with Intentions to dissipate those Gentlemen that were got together for the King, advances to *Litchfield*. The Earle of *Chesterfield* had some

Forces

Forces in the Towne for the King, who upon the Lord *Brooks* his advance to the Towne, quits it, and retires with his Forces to the *Close*, which was far more tenable than the Towne.

Brookes takes possession of the Towne, and being in a window peeping to watch an advantage against the Enemy, was shot into the Eye, and died immediately. His Souldiers notwithstanding the losse of their chief Commander, fall on with much resolution, and after a short dispute possest themselves of the Church and Close, took the Earle of *Chesterfield*, with divers Commanders and many Common Souldiers.

Prince *Rupert* immediatly lays siege to *Litchfield*, and having notice of the advance of some of the Parliaments forces under the Command of *Brereton* and *Gell* to raise the siege, drew out neer a thousand Horse and Dragoons, fell on the enemy, which they put to flight, and by their flight left Bag and Baggage to the Kings forces, with divers pieces of Ordinance, and many prisoners.

But the Earle of *Northampton* Charging in the head of the body was slaine, they returne to the siege, spring a mine, and scale the walls; whereupon the besieged desire a Parly, and on reasonable conditions quit the Towne.

In *May* 1643. The Lords and Commons Vote that an Act be past for an Assembly of Divines

immediately to be call.d to settle Religion.

They likewise Vote the making of a new Great Seale, a thing never heard or read of in the Nation; which Mr. *Prin* defends in his book, entituled, *The opening of the Great Seale of England.*

Sir *John Hotham* sends word to the Earle of *Newcastle*, that *Hull* and *Lincolne* shall be deliver'd up to him for the service of his Majesty, and both father and son resolve to stand on their own Guard at *Hull*,

Mr *Jermin* Generalissimo for the Queen, was at *Newark*, who levying a considerable party for the securing of the County, she with thirty Companies of Horse and Dragoons, and three thousand foote, meets the King at *Edghill*, it being the first time she saw him since her departure into *Holland*. The King and Queen retire to *Oxford*.

The Parliament draw up Articles of High Treason against the Queen; *That she had pawned the Jewels of the Crowne, raised the Rebellion in* Ireland, *endeavoured to raise a party in* Scotland *against the Parliament, that she had appeared in the head of a Popish party*, which was at last past by both Houses.

They likewise Vote that the King and Queens revenue should be detained, and imployed in the publick service.

They

They likewiſe Voted a new and unheard of tax to be laid upon Beer, Wine, Tobacco, and whatſoever is neceſſary for ſupport of life; which they call'd *Exciſe*

Sir *John Hotham* and his ſon are both taken priſoners by Sir *Matthew Boynton*, their eſtates ſeazed and confiſcate, Sir *John* endeavouring to eſcape, was knockt downe by a Souldier at the ſame Gate that he denied the King Entrance. They are both ſent by Sea priſoners to the Parliament, and Sir *Matthew* took poſſeſſion of the Towne.

June 17, 1643. The Earle of *Eſſex* at *Tame*, orders the *Buckingham* Forces to beat up the Kings quarters, which accordingly they did; Prince *Rupert* having notice of it, falls in with a body of Horſe, Routed and diſperſt moſt of the party; There was ſlaine the Earle of *Muſgraves* Son, and Mr. *Hamden*, one of the five Impeached Members, a man violently active againſt the King.

At that time the Parliaments Army was much viſited with the Contagion, many dying dayly.

On the fift of *July* was a great defeat given to Sir *William Waller* in the Weſt (after he had continued there victoriouſly for ſome time) by a party from *Oxford*, conducted by the Lord *Wilmot*, which defeate gave a great Check to the Parliament.

The

The Generall by reaſon of the ſickneſſe, and other great wants of his Army, marches towards *London*, quartering them at *Kingſtone* on *Thames*, and other adjacent places.

Great were the ſucceſſes of the King almoſt in every part of the Kingdome; for Sir *William Waller* was quite routed in the Weſt, Sir *Ralph Hopton* in the head of a Gallant Army, upon whom the King was pleaſed for his fidelity and Valour, to confer the Honour and Title of a Baron.

Prince *Rupert* was order'd to beſiege *Briſtoll*, which in ſhort time was deliver'd to him.

Prince *Maurice* beſieged *Exeter* (whither the Earle of *Stamford* was fled) which on the fourth of *September* 1643 was deliver'd up to him upon Articles, Sir *John Barkley* was made Governour.

The Lord *Fairfax*, Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and moſt of the Parliaments forces in the North were defeated & driven into *Hull*, by the Lord of *Newcaſtle*, who at that time commanded the Greateſt Army in *England*, and not only able to terrifie the Parliaments Forces in *England*, but likewiſe formidable to any *Scotch* forces that ſhould come to their aſſiſtance.

Collonell *Goring* landed at *Newcaſtle* with 200 old Souldiers.

The Earle of *Newcaſtle* in his march from *Tadcaſter*,

caſter, ſurprized *Leeds*, and in it divers perſons of quality, friends to the Parliament; he likewiſe proclaimes the Lord *Fairfax* traytor.

The King in the head of a Gallant Army ſummons *Gloceſter*, offering free pardon and protection to the Inhabitants, if they would lay downe their Armes, requiring a poſitive anſwer in two houres. In the Interim he ſurrounds the Towne with ſix thouſand Horſe and foot; by the time appointed, the Magiſtrates, Officers, and Souldiers, returne this anſwer; *That they kept the Towne for his Majeſty and his Royall poſterity, and doe accordingly conceive our ſelves wholly bound to obey the Commands of his Majeſty ſignified by both Houſes of Parliament, and are reſolved by Gods Help to keep the City accordingly.*

The King ſtood amazed at their confidence, for at that time they could not hope for reliefe; In the Towne was onely one Regiment of foote, an hundred Horſe, beſide the trained bands, in all not exceeding fifteen hundred men. The King reſolves to lay a cloſe ſiege, and a conſiderable party Intrencht on the South and Eaſt ſide, though they within ſallied out with ſome damage to the Kings forces, the *Welſh* and *Worceſterſhire* forces on the North-weſt ſide, Generall *Ruthen* on the South-ſide, the Eaſt and South parts were dam'd up with Earth: They within make no leſſe then eight ſallies in ten dayes, with no ſmall prejudice to the beſiegers.

The

The King prepares for a ſtorme, which with much valour was performed on both ſides; a mine was ſprung under the Eaſt gate which they countermin'd by the induſtry of Collonell *Maſſey* the Governour.

The Parliament being inform'd of the Kings Intentions toward *Gloceſter*, order the Generall to march out, who muſtred about 10000 Horſe and ſoote at *Hounſlow*, and ſo marches forward for the reliefe of the Towne. They likewiſe took care for recruiting an Army for Sir *William Waller*. The Generall being come within ſeven miles of *Gloceſter*, fired ſome peices of Ordinance to give notice of his approach. On the firſt of *September* a party of Horſe is ſent to face him, whilſt the King drew off from the ſiege.

Many of the Kings friends much blamed him for ſitting downe before the Towne, when he might without difficulty have come to *London*, and fully ended the work; for the Parliament were never in ſo low a condition ſince the beginning of the warre, as they were when the King firſt ſat downe before the Towne.

The Lords Houſe being ſenſible of the danger, Vote a Treaty, and the Commons were conſulting of it.

The Parliament ſent to require the aſſiſtance of their brethren of *Scotland*, and Vote 30000 *l.* be inſtantly borrowed for their advance.

The

The Solemn League and Covenant was drawn up and taken by all the Members of both Houſes, and orderd to be impoſed on all the aſſociated Counties; Doctor *Featly* a reverend and learned Divine, was impriſoned for refuſing to take it.

The King immediatly ſends out his Proclamation againſt it, in theſe words; *Whereas there is printed a paper pretended to be order'd by the Commons in Parliament, on the* 21 *of* September *laſt, to be printed and publiſhed, which Covenant, though it ſeems to make ſpecious expreſſions of piety and religion, it is indeed nothing elſe but a trayterous and ſeditious combination againſt him, and againſt the eſtabliſhed religion and Laws of this Kingdome, in purſuance of a traiterous deſigne and endeavour to bring in forreign forces to invade this Kingdome: his Majeſty doth therefore ſtraitly charge and command all his loving ſubjects, of what degree and quality ſoever, upon their allegiance, that they preſume not to take the ſaid ſeditious and traiterous Covenant; moſt ſtraitly forbidding all his ſubjects to tender the ſaid Covenant, as they will anſwer the contrary at their extreameſt perill.*

The Earle of *Bedford* and *Holland* came to *Oxford* to tender their allegiance to the King, but after a ſhort ſtay return'd to the Parliament.

The Marqueſſe of *Ormond*, the Kings Lieutenant Generall in *Ireland*, upon the Kings Letter ſend,

ſends over five Regiments of Souldiers for the Kings ſervice, every Officer and Souldier firſt took an Oath to defend the Proteſtant cauſe, and the Kings perſon againſt all enemies.

Eſſex ſuddenly ſurprizes *Cirenceſter*, by killing the Centery, marcht into the Town, without any oppoſition, and in it took great ſtore of Armes and Ammunition, with thirty Cart load of proviſions, which was there reſerv'd for the Kings Army. From thence he marches to *Chilleton*.

The Kings Forces drew up on *Maverne* hills.

The Earle of *Eſſex* drew off toward *Hungerford*, and from thence toward *Newbery*, which the Kings Forces had poſſeſt before-hand.

On Wedneſday the 20 of *September* 1643. was fought the famous battle of *Newbery*, on which depended the condition of the whole Kingdome. The Kings Forces early in the morning had poſſeſt themſelves of *Biggs-hill*: *Eſſex* his own Regiment aſſiſted with Collonell *Barkleys* and Collonell *Holburnes* Regiment marcht, and Charging furiouſly beat them from the Hill and poſſeſt it.

By this time a great body of the Kings Horſe fell on a party of Horſe commanded by Sir *Philip Stapleton*, who received the Charge with much reſolution, and beat the Enemy up to their main body. The fight continued till neer night.

The *London* trained bands and Auxiliaries behaved

haved themſelves with much Valour and reſolution.

The number of the dead was not certainly known. There were divers perſons of quality ſlain, and wounded on the Kings ſide, as likewiſe divers Colours were taken and ſent up to *London*.

Collonell *Maſſey* from *Gloceſter* moves up and down with a party of Horſe, and doth much miſchiefe to the Kings Forces.

The Kings Forces Garriſon all round about *Gloceſter*, a party of the Kings Horſe and foote rove up and down, and ſeaze upon divers good booties.

But the Kings main body was orderd toward *Reading*, which was then beſieged by *Eſſex*.

Arundell Caſtle having been 28 dayes beſieged by Sir *William Waller*, was delivered on Conditions.

The King in *December* 1643. ſummons the Members of both Houſes to appear in *January* following at *Oxford*, to adviſe in ſetling the peace of the Kingdome; where on the 22th of *January* they meet at the Great Hall in Chriſt-Church, where his Majeſty declar'd, *That if he had the leaſt thoughts of diſagreeing with the happineſſe of this Kingdome, he would not adviſe with ſuch Councellors as they were.*

The Lords ſat in the upper Schooles; the

Com-

Commons in the Great Convocation House.

There were assembled the Prince, the Duke of *York*, *Cumberland*, *Fr. Cottington*, Treasurer, *Ed. Littleton*, Keeper of the Seale, The Duke of *Richmond*, and Marquesse of *Hartford*, 19 Earls, 18 Lords, 126 Knights and Gentlemen, beside a Great quantity of Noblemen, Knights, and Gentlemen, imployed in his Majesties service in the severall parts of the Kingdome.

Their first work was to endeavour a peace, to which purpose a Letter is sent to the Earle of *Essex*, which he communicates to the House at *Westminster*.

On the 16 of *January* 1644, The *Scots* Army, consisting of 18000 foot and 2000 Horse, enter *England* by the way of *Newcastle*, and set forth a Declaration of the justnesse of their Cause, the Lawfulnesse of their Call.

Newark having been three weeks besieged by Sir *John Meldram*, with an Army of 7000. Prince *Rupert* with a body of 4000 Horse and Dragoons, and 1000 foot raises the siege.

The Lord *Fairfax* and his Son Sir *Thomas* goe on victoriously in the North, and in severall Encounters gave divers defeats to the Earle of *Newcastles* forces.

The Parliament at *Oxford* having sat from *January* to *Aprill*, and done no great matter, the King after a Speech prorogues them to the 8 of *October*,

October, and afterwards by Proclamation till the 9 of *November*.

The Queen went from *Oxford* toward the West of *England*, in order to her going over into *France*, was attended the first dayes journey by her two eldest Sons, and many of the Nobility.

The King in presence of the Peeres at *Oxford*, received the Sacrament from the hands of Bishop *Usher*, using these solemne Protestations.

My Lords;

I espie here many resolv'd Protestants, who may declare to the world the Resolution I doe now make, I have to the utmost of my power prepar'd my soule to become a worthy receiver, and may I so receive comfort by the blessed Sacrament, as I doe intend the Establishment of the true reformed Protestant Religion, as it stood in its beauty in the happy dayes of Queen Elizabeth, *without any connivance at Popery. I blesse God that in the midst of these publick distractions, I have still liberty to communicate, and may this Sacrament be my damnation, if my heart doe not joyne with my lips in this Protestation.*

The Countesse of *Darby* held out *Latham House* against a considerable force of the Parliaments for neer 18 weeks; The besiegers hearing

of Prince *Ruperts* advance for the Counteſſes reliefe, drew off from the ſiege, upon which they ſally out and did great Execution upon the Enemy.

The Parliament at *Weſtminſter* Vote it treaſon for any Member of either Houſe to deſert them, and goe to the King, and the Member or Members ſo doing, never to be receiv'd more into the Houſe.

In *June* 1644. Collonell *Maſſey* ſummons *Malborrough*, which was commanded by Collonell *Hen. Howard*, who refuſing to deliver it up to him, raiſes a Great battery, and with ſome Great Ordinance forc't his paſſage, who with much Courage enters the Towne, put the Enemy to flight, and took above a hundred priſoners.

Sir *William Waller* with a body of Horſe and foote attends the Kings motion from place to place, and neere *Crepida* bridge, the Kings Horſe faced Sir *William*, and charg'd thrice through and through, kill'd 150 men, and took all his Traine of Artillery, together with diverſe conſiderable Officers, priſoners.

The King preſently marches to *Bath*, with intent to follow the Earle of *Eſſex*, who was gone that way.

On the 23 of *July* 1644. he came to *Kingſmore*, and by the firſt of *Auguſt* came to *Liskard*, ſome few miles diſtant, where he encompaſt the Earle

Earle of *Eſſex* his Army, his Majeſty and Prince *Maurice* at *Boncke* on the one ſide, Sir *Richard Greenvill* in *Bodnim*, and Sir *Jacob Aſtley* at *Hall*.

The Kings Souldiers were very deſirous to fight, but it was thought more convenient to keep them up from proviſions.

In eight dayes attendance very little was performed, but ſome ſmall skirmiſhes of Horſe; a party of 1500 foote was ſent Weſt to prevent all proviſions coming that way.

Eſſex his Army marcht toward *Foy*, leaving moſt of their great Pieces behind them, the King followed, and fell in upon the reare, forc't them to retire in diſorder, and had not night prevented, in all probability, the whole Army had been deſtroyed.

The next morning Early the Earle of *Eſſex* quit his command, and went by boate to *Plimouth*; They require a Parly, and choſe Collonell *Barkley*, Collonell *Whitchcot*, and Collonell *Butler* on the Parliaments party; On the Kings ſide, Prince *Maurice*, the Lord Generall, and the Lord *Digby*, in eight Articles the agreement was made, to deliver up all their Artillery, with all their bag and baggage, no perſon under the degree of a Corporall to weare any kind of weapon, all Officers above, onely ſword and piſtoll; There were accordingly deliver'd up 49 Pieces

of Braſſe Ordinance, 200 barrells of powder, with bullet and match proportionable, 9000 Armes for Horſe and foote; ſome thouſands of the common Souldiers were immediately upon their deſire entertain'd in his Majeſties ſervice.

Eſſex endeavoureth to excuſe it to the Parliament, as if by reaſon of *Wallers* not purſuing the Kings Army.

Yet notwithſtanding this Great Victory, the King ſends a Meſſage to both Houſes of Parliament for a peace, and likewiſe a Letter to the Earle of *Eſſex* to the ſame purpoſe.

The Nobility likewiſe ſubſcribe a Letter to the Earle of *Eſſex*.

The King from *Taveſtoke* ſends another Letter to both Houſes for an accommodation; but the Parliament were ſo averſe that nothing could prevaile.

The Parliament at *Oxford* met againe, but unfortunately they fell into diviſions and factions, which the King plainly perceived could produce no good effect, in *March* following he diſſolves them.

Not long after the *Eſtates* of the *Low Countries* ſend over Ambaſſadours to mediate in behalfe of a peace betwixt the King and Parliament.

Prince *Rupert* goes on Victoriouſly with a flying Army, relieves *Bolton*, *Stopford*, and *Leverpoole*,

poole, advances to *York* (and in his way Raiſes the ſiege of *Latham Houſe*) which was at that time beſieged by the Parliaments Forces. Upon his approach the Enemy drew off their ſiege. They within ſally out and doe ſome miſchiefe to the reare of the Enemy. The Prince purſues them, with a Reſolution to give them Battaile.

At laſt he comes to *York*, upon whoſe approach the beſiegers drew off; the Prince follows, intending to fight them, and accordingly the third of *July* 1644 at ſeven a clock in the morning the fight began, the Parliaments Forces having the advantage of the ground, being on the South ſide of *Marſton Moore*, within four miles of *York*; the Prince with the Right wing fell on the Parliaments Forces, routs them; the Generall *Goring*, and Sir *Charles Lucas*, fell on the maine body of the Enemy, and routed them, but purſuing them too far, the Enemy Rallied, and fell on the divided bodyes, totally diſperſt them, took 3000 priſoners, 20 pieces of Ordinance, beſide a conſiderable quantity of Officers.

Immediately the Lord *Fairfax* and his Son, the Earle of *Mancheſter* ſurround *York*; Sir *Thomas Glenham* being then Governour for the King, but by reaſon of *Marſton-Moore*-fight, all their powder and Ammunition was ſpent, Sir *Thomas* was compeld to deliver it on honourable tearmes.

In *December* 1644 *William* Lord Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, after above an hundred times Attendance on the Houſe, was by the Commons Voted Guilty of High Treaſon, and therefore condemn'd to be hang'd, drawne, and quarter'd, which ſentence he patiently received; but upon his Petition, they Vote him to be beheaded: he likewiſe Petitions for his Chaplain Dr *Sterne*, to whom they joyne Mr *Marſhall* (whom he refuſed) for the Comfort of his ſoule; and accordingly on the tenth of *January* he was conducted by *Penington* to the ſcaffold on Tower-hill, where he made his laſt Sermon to the people, enlarging himſelfe on this Text, *Heb.* 12. and 2^d, *Let us run with patience the race that is ſet before us, looking unto Jeſus the Author and finiſher of our faith, who for the Joy that was ſet before him, endured the Croſſe, and deſpiſed the ſhame, and is now ſet downe at the Right hand of the throne of God*; which Sermon or Speech continued almoſt an houre, and after prayer, and ſome ſhort Ejaculations, laid down his head upon the block, which the Executioner ſtruck off at one blow, and thus with much patience and Chriſtian magnanimity he deliver'd up his ſoule to God.

Sir *John Hotham* in *December* 1644. was ſentenc't to looſe his head, Captain *Hotham* was likewiſe Condemn'd and Executed the firſt of *January*, Sir *John* the ſecond of *January* on Tower-hill.

Not

Not long after there was a treaty of peace appointed at *Uxbridge*; The Commiſſioners on both ſides being met, the Propoſals on both ſides were made, but all hopes of peace were fruſtrate; Mr *Love* was much complained of, who preaching there, told them, *That the Kings Commiſſioners came with hearts full of blood, and that there is as great diſtance between this treaty and peace, as between heaven and hell*, for which in ſtead of being checkt, he is taken into favour by the Parliament.

In *March* 1645. Sir *Lewis Dives* took *Waymouth* for the King; In which was good ſtore of Ordinance, and all other proviſions anſwerable, with forty ſmall Veſſells in the Harbour.

The Kings Forces lay ſiege to *Melcomb Regis*. *Crumwell* intends to joyne with *Waller* for its relieſe.

They of the Garriſon of *Plimouth* iſſue out, and beate the Kings Forces from Mount *Stamford*, and took 150 priſoners.

Sir *Marmaduke Langdale* went out of *Oxford* with 2000 Horſe and Dragoones, fell upon the *Lincolnſhire* Horſe, and forc't them to retire confuſedly, having taken two compleate troops, marcht forward with Intentions to cauſe the Parliaments Forces to draw off, thereby to relieve *New-wark*, *Belvoire*, *Aſhby de la zouch*, with proviſion to enable them to hold out the longer

when they ſhall be attempted.

They likewiſe endeavour the reliefe of *Pomfret* Caſtle, but my Lord *Fairfax* is ready with a body to receive him.

However, Sir *Marmaduke* advances, falls on the Enemy, and after he had kild and taken diverſe hundreds, relieves the Caſtle, and returnes to *New-wark*, from thence to *Litchfeild*, that thereby he may make choice either of going to *Oxford*, or joyning with Prince *Maurice*.

The King at *Oxford* takes care to furniſh it, as alſo *Wallingford* and *Banbury*, with all neceſſary proviſions for ſix moneths, and to get a formidable Army into the field this Summer.

The Houſe of Lords made the Earle of *Northumberland*, and his Lady, Governour and Governeſſe of the Kings Children at *Whitehall*.

The Earle of *Northampton* lying at *Banbury* with foure hundred Horſe, fell on the *Northampton*-Horſe, routed and kild many.

Major Generall *Browne* at *Abbington* ſent out ſeverall parties at times, who returned very ſucceſsfull, with good ſtore of proviſions, having kild diverſe of the Enemy.

The Commons conceive the Earle of *Eſſex* too mild in the proſecution of the warre, he having had ſuch ill ſucceſſe in the Weſt; and began to thinke of New Moddelling the Army; to which purpoſe a Bill is brought into the Houſe for Sir *Thomas*

Thomas Fairfax to be Generall. They likewiſe Vote the Earle of *Eſſex*, to pacifie him, 10000 *l. per Annum* out of Delinquents eſtates.

Both Houſes Vote Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, a Gentleman deſcended from a Noble and ancient family, to be Generall for the Parliament, who with much modeſty accepted of it.

On the firſt of *Aprill* he iſſued out Commiſſions; and on the third of *Aprill* went privately to *Windſor*, to aſſiſt in the New Moddelling of the Army.

They likewiſe continued Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell*, a ſtout Champion for his Country, who having received his Commiſſion, immediately marcht and found the Enemy, and ingag'd them at *Ipſley Bridge*; the Enemies Brigade conſiſted of the Queens, Colonell *Wilmots*, the Earle of *Northampton*, and Colonel *Palmers* Regiments, Routed them, kild many, took 500 Horſe, and 200 priſoners, together with the Queens Standard; and purſues them to *Blechingdon*-houſe, which Colonel *Windebank* kept for the King.

He ſends a ſharp Summons to the Governour to be ſpeedily anſwered; The Governour doubting of reliefe from *Oxford*, immediately ſurrenders the Houſe, with all the Armes and Ammunition; *Cromwell* immediately ſlighted the houſe, and ſent the Armes to *Alsbury*.

For which *Windebank* was ſentenc't by a Councell

cell of War at *Oxford* to be ſhot to death.

The Generall having compleated the Army, was at a loſſe which way he ſhould ſteere his courſe, either to *Oxford*, or the Weſt; *Oxford* was the Kings chiefe Garriſon, and there lay the moſt part of his traine of Artillery, which if he could take, would be of very great conſequence: but the diſtreſſed eſtate of *Taunton*, then cloſe beſieged by the Kings Forces, ballanc't the ſcale, and at a Councell of War it was reſolved to relieve *Taunton*.

The King at that time was in a condition to take the field, and had ſent ſeverall Diſpatches to that purpoſe.

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* on the firſt of *May* advances with the whole Army, firſt to *Blanford*, then to *Salisbury*, excepting that party of Horſe and Dragoones, Commanded by Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell*, and foure Regiments of foote, which were ordered to joyn with him.

The King taking the advantage of the Armies march into the Weſt, draws forth his Artillery from *Oxford*, and began to gather into a conſiderable Body; Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell* and *Browne* were orderd to attend him; but being too few in number to engage, The Generall by the Committee of both Kingdomes was commanded back, all but a Brigade for the Reliefe of *Taunton*, which were neer 5000 foote and 2000 horſe, who

who march without any impediment till they came within ten miles of *Taunton*, where they discharged ten pieces of Ordinances to give the Enemy notice of their arrivall.

The Enemy being inform'd that the Generall and the whole Army were within ten miles, prepare to draw off; upon which *Blake* made a sally out, and fell upon the reare, kild and took diverse. Colonel *Wildon* sends a party of Horse, who march to the walls, for the Enemy had quit it.

The viewing the Towne was one of the saddest spectacles that ever eyes beheld, it being almost consum'd by fire, and the people almost starv'd.

The Generall, and most of the Army, being come back to *Newbery*, were met with an order of the Committee of both Kingdomes, immediately to lay close siege to *Oxford*; *Cromwell* and *Browne*, that attended the King, were commanded back to assist in the work, and after fifteen dayes surrounding the Towne, it was by a Councell of War thought altogether Inconvenient to continue the siege, & the Kings Army unattempted in the field, which the Generall presents to the Committee.

The King Horses most of his foote, and moves up and downe (and taking the Advantage of the *Scots* advance toward *Westmorland*) and after he had

had relieved *Chester* comes on and faces *Leicester*, Prince *Rupert* sent a Summons to the Towne, offering quarter to the Souldiers, Townsmen and Countrymen. The Committee and Officers within, desire till next morning to returne their answer. The Trumpeter no sooner comes to the Kings Army, but immediately a Drum is sent to require an answer in a quarter of an houre, which while they were debating in the Towne, the Kings Canons from the battery began to play, and all were commanded to their Charge, in order to a storme; the Conteſt continued a day and a night, with a great deale of Resolution on both sides. In some breaches they came to push of Pike.

On Saturday at three of the Clock they enterd the Towne, and in hot blood many were put to the sword, some plunderd.

On the other side, Colonel *Massey* with 2000 Horse and foote, having laine two dayes before *Evisham*, storm'd the Towne, and took it, with the Governour, and twenty Officers, 500 foote, 120 Horse, with all the Armes and Ammunition.

The Commons order six hundred men to be sent for the security of *Portsmouth*.

There came news from the West, that Generall *Goring*, Sir *Ralph Hopton*, and Sir *Richard Greenvill*, had joyned together, and falne upon that

that party that had relieved *Taunton*, and forc't them to retire to *Taunton* in great diſorder.

Upon the news of the taking of *Leiceſter*, the Commons order that the ſtraightning of *Oxford* be turned to a cloſe ſiege; Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell* was orderd toward *Ely*, to prevent the Kings breaking into the aſſociated Counties: they likewiſe order the Earle of *Leven* to advance with the *Scots* Army, and to joyne with Colonel *Vermuden*, to prevent the Kings going Northward.

But upon ſecond thoughts the Commons order the Generall to raiſe the ſiege at *Oxford*, and to take care to preſerve the aſſociated Counties, and fight the King.

The Generall on his removall viewed *Boſtoll* Houſe, and ordred a party to beſiege it.

He likewiſe ſent a party of Horſe and foote, Commanded by Colonel *Rainsborough*, to ſummon *Gaunt* Houſe; The Governour upon the firſt ſummons return'd anſwer, that he liked not *Windebanks* Law, but the next day *Rainsborough* having provided all things ready for a ſtorme, the Governour cauſed a parly to be beaten, and ſurrenderd upon Quarter.

Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell*, moving up and downe in *Cambridge-ſhire*, *Huntington*, and *Ely*, managed his buſineſſe with ſo much diſcretion, as that he was able to have raiſed an Army of

12000

12000 men to aſſiſt him in following the King.

But leaving thoſe Counties in a poſture of defence, he marches toward the Generall with 600 Horſe and Dragoones.

The King ſends a party of Horſe, and faces *Northampton*, he himſelfe being at *Harborough* with the maine Body.

The King ſends 1200 Horſe (with good ſtore of Cattell and ſheepe to *Oxford*) which immediately returne.

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* came with the Army to *Wotton*, thence to *Glaſtenborough*, within five miles of *Burrough hill*, where the Kings Forces were all drawne up in a readineſſe.

The Generall for the Parliament advances from *Gilling* to *Naſeby*, endeavouring to ingage the Enemy, the ſcouts diſcover that they were at *Harborough*, and great bodyes of Horſe appeared on the hills nigh *Harborough*; he orders a Randevouz of the Army neere *Naſeby*, and to put them in ſuch a poſture, that ſhould the King advance toward them, they might having the advantage of ground, receive him. By this time the Kings Army advances, endeavouring to get the winde, which occaſioned Sir *Thomas Fairfax* to draw off the Army into a large fallow field, toward the Northweſt of *Naſeby*, which was defended on the right hand with a Hedge, a place very convenient for a battell.

January

January 13. 1645. the King draws off from *Burrough hill*, the ſcouts bringing Intelligence of the Parliaments Army approaching, took up their quarters in *Naſeby*.

Ireton with a flying party of Horſe fell upon the flanke of the Enemy, kild ſome, and took diverſe priſoners, which ſo allarum'd the King that he poſts to *Harborough* for better ſecurity; ſummons a Councell of War, and conſiderd that ſhould they draw off and march to *Leiceſter*, if the reare were ingaged, the whole Army might be in danger, and they could with no ſafety march with the Van till the Reare was ſecured; whereupon it was reſolv'd to give battell, which was the moſt fatall and deſtructive to the King that ever hapned ſince the firſt beginning of the quarrell; yet many of the principall Officers endeavoured to perſwade to avoyd fighting.

The King Commanded the maine body; The Right wing was Commanded by Prince *Rupert* and Prince *Maurice*; The Left by Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*; The Right Hand Reſerve by the Earle of *Lindſey*, and Sir *Jacob Aſtley*; The Left by the Lord *Bards*; and Sir George *Liſle*.

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* Commanded the maine Body; Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell* the Right Wing; *Ireton* the Left: Prince *Rupert* falls in on the Left wing, Routs them, purſues them to *Naſeby* Towne, and being too eager of the plunder, loſt

loſt the King the day; for in his abſence Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell* Charges furiouſly on the Kings Left Wing, and forc't them to retire from the body; Sir *Thomas Fairfax* with the maine body advances, falls on the Kings body, who received them with much Valour and courage; Great Rallyings there was on both ſides, and for a long time the battell was fought with Equall Courage, but it pleaſed God to give the Victory to the Parliaments Forces; for upon their Rallying they recovered Courage and Charged with greater fury, forcing the Kings Forces to fly, and had the purſuite of them within two miles of *Leiceſter*, which is neere fourteen miles. They left behind them all their traine of Artillery, bag and baggage, many were ſlaine, 4000 taken priſoners, 200 Wagons, 3000 Horſe, many Officers of note.

On the Parliaments ſide about 1000 Officers and Common Souldiers, diverſe Officers wounded.

Great were the ſucceſſes of the Parliament in diverſe places.

In the field was taken the Kings Cabinet of Letters, which were ſent up to the Parliament, and by them publiſhed.

The Marqueſſe of *Wincheſter* held out *Baſing* Houſe for the King a long time after it was beſieged. The Parliaments Forces deſpairing of gaining it drew off.

This

This was the laſt pitcht Battell that ever the King fought. The King with ſome forces fled to *Leiceſter*, and not conceiving himſelfe ſafe by reaſon of the Parliaments forces advance, goes to *Aſhby de la Zouch*, where after he had reſted himſelfe a ſmall time, in the dead of the night went to *Litchfield*, and ſo into *Wales*.

Sir *Marmaduke Langdale* fled the ſame night to *New-wark*.

Munday the 16 of *June*, the Parliaments Generall and Army comes before *Leiceſter*: The Generall ſummons the Governour immediately to deliver the Towne, with all the Armes and Ammunition: the Lord *Haſtings* being Governour returnes anſwer, that he would not deliver it, but hold it out to the laſt man; which occaſioned the Generall to Iſſue out Warrants to ſummon the Country to bring in Ladders and things neceſſary for a ſtorme..

And on the 17 of *June* they began to ſtorme; the Governour perceiving the danger, ſends a Trumpet to deſire a parly for the delivery of the Towne; which was concluded in ten Articles, and the next day the Towne was delivered up. In it was 14 piece of Ordinance, 30 Colours, 2000 Armes, 500 Horſe, with diverſe other neceſſaries for warre.

The King returnes for *Hereford* with 2000 foote, that Major Generall *Gerhard* had raiſed in

Wales for him, and poſts over *Severne* toward *Briſtoll*; Prince *Rupert* following him with 3000 Horſe.

Sir *William Brereton* in *Shropſhire*, fell on a party of the Kings, routed them, and took 300 priſoners.

Not long after Sir *Thomas Glenham*, Governour of *Carlile* for the King, having been a conſiderable time beſieg'd, and having no hopes of Reliefe, delivers up the Towne on honourable Conditions.

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* marches with the beſt part of the Army to the Reliefe of *Taunton*, then beſieged by *Goring*.

At that time there was in the Weſt a multitude of Rude people called Clubmen, who declaring for the King, did great miſchiefe to diverſe of the Parliaments Garriſons; they boldly Capitulate with Sir *Thomas Fairfax* at *Dorcheſter*, and deſire ſafe paſſage for ſuch as they ſhould appoint to goe both to the King and Parliament, in order to an Accommodation.

Sir *Thomas* civilly ſends them an anſwer, which not anſwering their expectation, and fearing to oppoſe ſo potent an Army, they draw off in diſcontent, not without doing ſome miſchiefe to the Governour of *Linne* then for the Parliament.

Upon the news of Sir *Thomas Fairfax* his arrivall within a dayes march of *Taunton*, *Goring* draws

draws off his forces, the beſieged ſally out, and forced the reare to retreate in diſorder; upon the Enemies flight, the Army advances, falls upon the Reare, and took diverſe priſoners.

They ſtill purſuing, at laſt engaged *Goring* at *Langport*, whom they worſted and put to flight, having taken diverſe Colours, ſome Armes and Ammunition.

The Generall returnes with the Army, and reſolves to beſiege *Bridgewater*, and having ſtaid ſome time till ſupplyes came, he cloſely begirts the Towne, ſummons the Governour, who returnes a reſolute anſwer, being every way well fortified and provided. The Generall reſolves to ſtorme it on Munday the 22 of *July* 1645. Which accordingly was performed with much Reſolution; but the enemy within being nothing daunted, fling Granadoes and other combuſtible ſtuffe, to the prejudice of the beſiegers.

The Generall the next day ſends a Meſſage, telling them that their deniall had wrought in him no thoughts of Compaſſion, but onely to women and children, who might otherwiſe ſuffer by the Governours obſtinacy, and accordingly diverſe Ladyes and Gentlewomen and Children came out of the Towne.

The Generall aſſaults them againe, and at laſt compells them to a ſurrender; they all to ſubmit themſelves priſoners, and the Towne to be pre-

ſerved from plunder, which accordingly was performed.

Immediately after *Pomfret* and *Scarborough* Caſtles were ſurrendred; no Reliefe being expected.

Toward the latter end of *July*, the Generall ſummon'd *Bath*, which was accordingly ſurrendred.

In *Auguſt* 1645. Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell* falls on the Club-men, who at that time were very high and inſolent, kills diverſe, and took above 300 priſoners.

The Generall ſummons *Sherburne* Caſtle, of which Sir *Lewis Dives* was Governour, who return'd a reſolute anſwer; but the next day was taken by ſtorme.

The Generall immediately reſolves to beſiege *Briſtoll*, which was govern'd by Prince *Rupert*; Orders were ſent for Ships to begirt it by Sea, he ſummons the Governour, who refuſing to ſurrender, immediately he ſurrounds it; they within ſally out ſix or ſeven times, not without loſſe on both ſides: at laſt it was agreed, to ſend a poſitive ſummons, and upon refuſall to ſtorme it.

The Prince requires leave to know the Kings minde, but the Generall would by no meanes permit it.

Upon the Princes refuſall, at a Councell of War

War it was reſolv'd to ſtorme it, which accordingly was with much Courage performed; the Towne was fired in many places, which moved the Prince to requeſt a parly, which the Generall conſented too, on condition that care ſhould be taken to quench the fire, and accordingly by Articles of agreement the 11 of *September* 1645. The City with all the Armes & Ammunition was deliver'd up.

The Prince with the reſt, immediately march to *Oxford.*

During the time of *Briſtolls* ſiege, news was brought of the ſeverall ſucceſſes of *Montroſſe* in *Scotland*, againſt the Covenanters, which moved the Generall, Lieutenant Generall, and all the Colonels of the Regiments, to ſubſcribe a Letter to General *Leaven* of the Condition of the Kingdome, and their willingneſſe to ſpare forces for their aſſiſtance.

All this while the King moves up and downe, ſometimes in *Wales*, ſometimes in one County, ſometimes in another, ſtill hearing the miſhaps and diſaſters hapning on the neck one of another; ſo that all his hopes were almoſt fruſtrate.

Lieutenant General *Cromwell* with part of the Army marches Weſtward, who after he had ſoundly batterd the Caſtle at the *Devizes*, forc't it to be ſurrendred; and not many dayes after he comes before *Wincheſter*, and ſummons it, which

was on honourable Conditions ſurrenderd.

He immediately marches to *Baſing*-Houſe, (which for a time had been beſieged, but to no purpoſe) and having ſummon'd it, he on refuſall reſolv'd to ſtorme it, by which meanes he got it.

The General was now before *Tiverton*, and had raiſed ſeverall Batteries, by which meanes he gained the Towne.

In *October* 1645. *Langford*-Houſe was delivered up to Lieutenant General *Cromwell*.

The General approaches neere *Exeeter*, *October* 20. 1645. ſummons it, and received a flat deniall; it was for ſometime beſieged, but by reaſon the King had a body moving up & down, it was twice deſerted, onely a party left to ſurround it; upon the Armies returne from the Weſt after it was ſtorm'd, was delivered up on Articles.

He likewiſe ſummons *Dartmouth*, on refuſall, took it by ſtorme.

A great defeate was given to *Hopton* at *Torrington*, who not long after was forced to disband his Army in the Weſt.

Sir *Marmaduke Langdale* received a great defeate neare *Sherburne*.

In *March*, *Aſhby de la zouch* was ſurrendred to the Parliaments forces.

In the ſame Moneth Prince *Charles* ſet ſaile for *Scilly*, with diverſe Lord and Gentlemen.

Other

Other Garriſons, as *Weſtcheſter*, *Barnſtable*, St *Michaels Mount*, *Ruthen* Caſtle, *Woodſtock*, together with diverſe other Garriſons were delivered up to the Parliament.

The *Scots* Army was at that time beſieging *New-wark*, with the aſſiſtance of ſome *Yorkſhire* Horſe.

There was not at that time a Towne or Caſtle in *England*, but what was either beſieged or blockt up by the Parliaments forces.

The Commons Vote the Committee of *Darby*-Houſe, to take care to beſiege *Oxford*, and accordingly the Generall having ſecured the Weſt, returnes with intent to beſiege it, which at that time was the Kings Royall ſeate.

The King Cauſes a Muſter of Horſe, which in all amounted to 1100 Horſe and Dragoones; great care is taken to make good the Workes, and to repaire what ever is amiſſe.

The Towne being beſieged, the King offers to come to the two Houſes, upon aſſurance of the ſafety of his perſon, and to adviſe with them for the good and ſafety of the Kingdome, Provided *all that have adhered to his Majeſty may have Liberty to goe to their own homes in ſafety, their ſequeſtrations to be taken off; upon theſe conditions his Majeſty is willing to disband all his Souldiers, and diſmantle his Garriſons, paſſe an act of oblivion and free pardon to all.*

Theſe Propoſitions the Parliament would by no meanes conſent unto, they having him at that advantage.

The King ſeeing no hopes, on the 27 of *Aprill* 1646. in diſguiſe came out of *Oxford*, attended by Mr *John Aſhburnham*, and one more; ſeverall conjectures paſt which way he ſhould goe.

The Parliament being miſ-inform'd that he was come to *London*, Order *that Proclamation be made, that whoſoever ſhall conceale his Majeſty, ſhall dye as a traytor, and forfeit his eſtate.*

On the ſixt of *May* 1646. His Majeſty came to the *Scots* Army, and had caſt himſelfe upon them, which occaſioned the *Scotch* Commiſſioners to write to the Parliament, that contrary to their expectation the King was come to their Army, ingaging to ſtand for the Intereſt of the Kingdome.

The Commons Vote that his Majeſties perſon be diſpoſed of, as both Houſes ſhall deſire and direct, and that he be ſent to *Warwick* Caſtle.

Upon the Kings deſire to the Governour, *Newark* was deliver'd up to the *Engliſh*.

The *Scots* marcht away to *Rippon* with the King.

The Parliament ſeeing the King was got into the *Scots* poſſeſſion, ſent a Letter to the Prince of *Wales*, then in *Gerſie*, to invite him to come to *London*, with promiſe of Honour and ſafety, but he durſt not venter.

The

The ſiege before *Oxford* being more cloſe then formerly, the Generall ſent a ſummons to Sir *Thomas Glenham* the Governour, who ſent a civill anſwer, with a requeſt, that Sir *John Minſon* and Mr *Philip Warwick*, may informe his Excellency in order to a Treaty, and accordingly on Articles it was ſurrendred on Honourable tearmes.

The 19 of *May* the *Scots* Army came with the King to *Newcaſtle*; the reaſon of their retreating Northward, was for feare that Sir *Thomas Fairfax* ſhould have falne on them, and compeld them to deliver up the King.

A great diſpute was at *Newcaſtle* betwixt the King and Mr *Alexander Henderſon*, which was ſince publiſhed.

Divers Propoſitions were preſented to the King, by the Commiſſioners from the Parliament, who were, the Earle of *Pembrooke*, Earle of *Suffolke*, Sir *Walter Earle*, Sir *John Ipſley*, Mr *Goodwin*, and Mr *Robinſon*, who came to *Newcaſtle* the 27 of *July*, and ordered to return in ten dayes; the next day the Propoſitions were preſented, and his Majeſty promiſed an anſwer within the time; but withall told them, that if they had not power to treate, they might as well have ſent a Trumpet; at the reading of the Propoſitions his Majeſty proteſted he would never give away his Crowne and Militia, and further told Mr *Marſhall*,

Marſhall, he could not in Conſcience ſigne ſome things therein required.

His Majeſty gave the Commiſſioners in a Paper, which not being ſatisfactory they returne to *London*.

The *Scots* likewiſe petition him to take the Covenant, and likewiſe they ſet out a Declaration of their Intentions for the good of both Kingdomes.

Litchfield, *Worceſter*, and *Wallingford*, were all deliver'd on Articles.

In *July* 1646. Prince *Rupert* went for *France*, and Prince *Maurice* for the *Hague*, where they both ſafely arrived.

The Duke of *York* came for *London*, and was Honourably received by the Nobility.

His Majeſty wrote four times to *Montroſſe*, at the *Scots* Commiſſioners requeſt, to lay downe his Armes.

In *Auguſt* 1646. the Commons order the Presbyterian Government to be ſettled in *London*.

In the ſame Moneth the Commons cauſed the Great Seale to be broken in the Lords Houſe.

The 14 of *September* 1646. dyed the Noble Earle of *Eſſex*, of an Appoplexie; a man truly faithfull to the Intereſt of his Country. The Houſe having reſpect to his former ſervice, Voted 3000 *l.* to be given toward his funerall; Mr. *Vines*

Vines preached his funerall Sermon; he was Honourably attended to his Grave, not without much Lamentation.

Upon the Kings refuſall of the Propoſitions, the *Scots* ſent Commiſſioners to the Parliament to deſire an agreement betwixt them.

Pendennis and *Ragland* Caſtle are in *Auguſt* ſurrendred.

The *Scots* Commiſſioners demand 500000 *l.* upon the payment of which they offer to deliver up the King. And accordingly it was Voted by the Houſe to deliver 200000 *l.* then borrowed of the Citizens of *London*, and raiſed out of the ſaile of the Biſhops Lands, together with the aſſiſtance of the Excize, and 200000 *l.* more ſecured to them to be payd at ſeverall times.

October the 8th 1646. the Houſe Votes to every Member 1000 *l.* a piece, in recompence of their Good ſervice, and that ſo many as are Lawyers may have Liberty to plead within the Bar; and likewiſe the Lord *Fairfax* 1000 *l. per Annum*.

The *Scots* being encouraged by the Votes of the Houſe, pretend, *that* Scotland *was much exhauſted by the late war, and that his Majeſties preſence in* Scotland, *might endanger the peace of that Nation*; ſo that it may truly be ſaid of him, as the Scripture expreſſeth of our Lord and Saviour; *He came to his own, and his own received him not.*

At

At laſt it was concluded, 100000 *l.* to be told at *York*, ſealed and put in boxes; The *Scots* to give Hoſtages to deliver up *Newcaſtle*, *Tinmouth*, and all other Garriſons thereabout; the other 100000 *l.* when they ſhall goe on the other ſide of *Tine*; The other 200000 *l.* to be ſecured to be paid out of Delinquents eſtates; They to deliver up the King, and depart home, and quit all their Garriſons.

The Aſſemblyes Confeſſion of Faith, was Voted by the Houſe to be printed.

And likewiſe an Ordinance paſt for continuing the Army under Sir *Thomas Fairfax* for ſix moneths, and the disbanding Major Generall *Maſſeys* Brigade.

The Common Enemy being quite beaten out of the field, there hapned ſad diviſions in the Parliament and Army at home; They were diſtinguiſhed into two ſeverall parties, under the title of *Presbyterian* and *Independent*, the *Independent* being the moſt ſubtill and cloſe, Inſinuated into the moſt part of the Army, and carried on their deſignes with greater Vigor and Reſolution then the other, as the ſequell will manifeſt.

The King from *Newcaſtle* on the 20 of *December* 1646. ſends a Meſſage to both Houſes of Parliament at *Weſtminſter*, and to the Commiſſioners of the Parliament of *Scotland*, for a perſonall Treaty.

Charles R.

Charles R.

His Majeſties thoughts have been alwayes ſincerely bent to the peace of his Kingdomes, was and will be ever deſirous to take all wayes that might moſt clearely make appeare the candor of his Intentions to his people, and to this end could find no better way then to propoſe a perſonall and free debate with his two Houſes of Parliament, upon all the preſent differences: yet finding very much contrary to his expectation, that this offer was laid aſide, His Majeſty beat all his thoughts to make his Intentions fully knowne by a particular anſwer to the Propoſitions deliver'd to him in the name of both Kingdomes the 24 of July *laſt; and that his Majeſty plainly ſaw, that whatſoever anſwer he could give, was ſubject to miſ-informations and miſ-conſtructions, which upon his own explanation he is confident will give good ſatisfaction for the ſetling of a laſting peace; to which purpoſe his Majeſty deſireth to come to* London, *or any of his Houſes thereabouts, upon the publick faith and ſecurity of his two Houſes, where by his perſonall preſence he may not onely raiſe a mutuall con-*

fidence

fidence betwixt him and his people, but also have those doubts cleared, and those difficulties explained to him, assuring them that he will make no other demands, but such as he believes confidently to be just, and such as will tend much to the tranquility of the people; for except King and people have reciprocall care each of other, neither can be happy.

To conclude, it is your King that desires to be heard, (the which if refused to a subject by a King, he would be thought a tyrant for it) wherefore his Majesty requests you to accept this offer, and that it will be the readiest way to make these Kingdomes a Comfort to their Friends, and a Terror to their Enemies.

The Lords and Commons after some time, sent a Letter by Sir *Peter Killigrew*, in answer to the Kings Message.

Both Houses Voted his Majesty to come to his House at *Holmbe* in *Northampton-shire*, a House not Inferior to any in the Kingdome.

They likewise Vote, that the Earle of *Pembrooke*, the Earle of *Denbigh*, and the Lord *Mountague*, Sir *Walter Earle*, Sir *John Holland*, Sir *James Harrington*, Sir *John Cooke*, Mr. *Crue*, and Major Generall *Browne*, with Mr *Marshall* and Mr *Caryl*

to

to attend them, be ſent as Commiſſioners to receive the King at *Newcaſtle*, and to conduct him to *Holmbey*.

They likewiſe orderd diverſe ſervants to attend him.

The ſixt of *February* 1646. The *Scots* according to agreement quit *Newcaſtle*, and the *Engliſh* poſſeſt it; they likewiſe deliver'd up his Majeſty to the Commiſſioners ſent by the Parliament; his Majeſty ſeemed ſomewhat unwilling at firſt to goe to *Holmbey*, rather chooſing to goe to *Newmarket*; but after a ſhort time he was ſatisfied; but by no meanes he could be drawne to heare Mr. *Marſhall* or Mr. *Caryl* preach, hoping they will allow him his Conſcience.

Munday the 8 of *February*, his Majeſty with a ſad and ſorrowfull Countenance ſet forward with the Commiſſioners, attended with 900 Horſe, and that night came to *Durham*, on thurſday to *Aukland*, fryday to *Richmond*, ſaturday to *Rippon*, and there reſted the Sabbath day, Munday to *Leeds*, tueſday to *Wakefeild*, wedneſday to *Rotheram*, ſo to *Manſfeild*, thence to *Leiceſter*, where he ſtays the next Lords day; on Munday He ſets forward for *Holmbey*, whither being no ſooner come, but Proclamation is made, that none that had deſerted the Parliament and aſſiſted the King, ſhould preſume to come neare his Majeſty.

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* came to *Leiceſter* with a con-

conſiderable part of the Army, where he was met with the Mayor and Aldermen in ſtate.

His Majeſty ſent a Letter to the Houſe to requeſt his Chaplains to be ſent to him, he named twelve; *viz.* Biſhop of *London*, Biſhop of *Saliſbury*, Biſhop of *Peterborough*, Dr *Shelden*, Dr *March*, Dr *Sanderſon*, Dr *Bayly*, Dr *Hamond*, Dr *Beale*, Dr *Haywood*, Dr *Fuller*, Dr *Taylor*, but deſired any two; hearing no anſwer, he ſent a ſecond Letter, but ſtill they delayed ſending an anſwer.

The 25 of *February*, his Majeſty at the Commiſſioners requeſt, kept the faſt, ordred by the Commons, it hapning on the ſame day that he had appointed, for the Calamities of *Ireland*.

February the 28 his Majeſty was pleaſed to beſtow a viſit on the Earle of *Pembrooke*, who was at that time dangerouſly ſick.

His Majeſty made a Reſolution to keep every fryday a day of ſolemne faſting and humiliation.

The Commons Vote and Order what Garriſons ſhall be ſlighted, and which continued.

The Parliament Vote likewiſe the remainder of the Army to disband, all but thoſe that were appointed for *Ireland*, and the ſeverall Garriſons.

Upon which diverſe Petitions came in from ſeverall Counties to the Generall, not to disband till ſuch time as he had fully ſettled the Kingdome;

dome; whereupon immediately the Army had a Randevouz, and draw up a Petition to be preſented to the Parliament, *That their arreares might be payd; An act of Indempnity paſſe, to ſecure them; that the foote might not be compeld to ſerve out of the Kingdome; that the widdowes and children of ſuch as had loſt their lives in the ſervice might be provided for*; which Petition was preſented by Colonell *Hamond*, Colonell *Rich*, and Colonell *Ireton*.

The Parliament ſhewed their diſlike of the Petition, and Vote that thoſe that ſhall continue in this diſturbing condition, ſhall be proceeded againſt as enemies to the State.

Petitions were likewiſe on the other ſide out of *Eſſex*, and other Counties, preſented to the Parliament, of their utter diſlike of the Armyes proceedings. But to cloſe the breach, Commiſſioners are choſen by the Parliament and Army, and meete in order to a Right underſtanding.

The Parliament order 60000 *l.* a moneth for payment of the Forces appointed, to prevent free quarter.

Upon his Majeſties deſire to come neere *London*, the Lords Vote him to come to *Otelands*, ſo ſoone as the Houſe can be provided; to which the Commiſſioners conſent.

After his Majeſty had been neere five moneths at *Holmbey*, on the fourth of *June* 1646. neare

a thouſand Souldiers, Commanded by Cornet *Joyce*, came ſomewhat late to *Holmbey*, and deſired to ſpeake with his Majeſty; it was anſwered that then it was unſeaſonable; However, with much Importunity Cornet *Joyce* was admitted into his Majeſties preſence, where he tould him he was come by command of the Army to remove him from that place; his Majeſty replyed, it was then too late, but in the morning he would ſpeak further with him.

His Majeſty according to his promiſe came downe in the morning to the Court yard, where he was attended by the Souldiers; he askt them by what Authority they came there; they replyed from the Army; He further askt if they came from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* his Army; the Cornet replyed from the Army.

His Majeſty ſaid, what if I ſhould refuſe to goe with you, would you compell me; they replyed, we hope your Majeſty will not refuſe, but we have command to bring you.

His Majeſty replyed, I have theſe Queſtions to put to you, which if you conſent to, I will goe with you.

The firſt was, *That he might have no violence offer'd to his perſon*; they all unanimouſly ſhouted and cryed out, none, none.

Secondly, He deſired *that his trunks and papers might not be rifled and tumbled*; they promiſed

ſed to ſet a Guard on them, and that they ſhould not be toucht.

Thirdly, *He requir'd ſuch ſervants to attend him, againſt whom there was no juſt acceptions*; they anſwered he ſhould.

Laſtly, He deſired *that nothing be Impoſed upon him contrary to his Conſcience*; they anſwered, it was not their Judgement to force any thing againſt conſcience on any one, much leſſe on his Majeſty; At one of the Clocke his Majeſty went along with them.

The next day the Generall ſent a Letter to the Parliament, to certifie that he knew nothing of the party that attended his Majeſty, neither what number, nor by what Authority: the reaſon that the party had ſent to him, he ſends up, which was that there were certaine perſons that intended to take away his Majeſty, thereby to make a new warre, the plot and plotters they were able to prove, when call'd thereunto, which neceſſitated them to ſecure his Majeſties perſon.

His Majeſty was according to his own deſire, convey'd to *Newmarket*; by this we ſee clearely, that the Greateſt in the world, are but pilgrims on Earth.

The Generall and Army Randevouz at St *Albones*, and ſent a Letter of his Intentions to come to *London* with the Army.

Eleven Members of the Commons Houſe are

Impeached by the Army.

On the 28 of *June*, 1647. His Majesty was brought to *Hatfield*, the Duke of *Richmond* attending him, with many of the old Courtiers.

D *Hamond* and diverse others of his Chaplains were admitted to read divine service to him, according to the Ancient custome of the Church of *England*.

The House being Informed of the Duke of *Richmond*, and the Chaplains attendants on his Majesty, Order a Letter to be forthwith sent to the General for their removall.

The Generall by Letters certifie the Parliament of his Majesties desire to see his Children, and his request for continuance of those persons about him; and further to satisfie them, that the Army have no treaty with his Majesty, nor ayme at nothing more then the setling of the peace of the Kingdome.

From *Hatfield* his Majesty was removed to *Causum*, attended by all that waited on him at *Hatfield*, excepting the Duke of *Richmond*, who voluntarily absented himselfe.

The House according to the Kings request, order his Children to goe to him, and the Earle of *Northumberland* to attend them; his Majesty was Joyfull at the sight of his Children.

The Generall being in the presence Chamber was much respected, which moved the Princess

to

to aske who it was, who being Inform'd it was the Generall, ſhe immediately addreſt her ſelfe to him with great civilitie, and thankt him for this great happineſſe, that ſhe then enjoyed the ſight of her deare Father, effected by him alone, which ſhe ſhould ever thankfully acknowledge, and endeavour to requite.

The Generall return'd humble thankes, and that what he had done was but the leaſt of thoſe duties he was oblig'd to ſerve his Majeſty and Children in, and kiſſing her Hand withdrew.

The Eleven Members diſcharge themſelves of their charge, and require leave of the Houſe to goe beyond Sea, which was conſented too.

Upon the Armyes removing to *Bedford*, his Majeſty was brought to *Wooborne*, a Houſe of the Lord of *Bedfords*, with his old attendance.

The Parliament Order the Militia of *London* to raiſe Forces, and immediately the Train'd Bands and Auxiliaries are commanded to man the Forts, upon Information of the Armyes coming to *London*; Colonell *Maſſey* was appointed Major Generall, Colonell *Poins* and others are put into Command.

The Generall Orders a Randevouz at *Hounſlow*, in order to his coming to *London*; thither diverſe of the Members of both Houſes with the Speaker repaire, and conſult of Getting the Citie without blood, and accordingly a party is ſent to

face *Southwark* Fort, upon whoſe approach it was deliver'd up to them.

The City petitions the Generall.

The Generall requires all the Forts from *Tyburne* to the *Thames*, to be delivered up to him, that he might Guard the Parliament, and ſecure the eleven Members.

On the ſeventh of *Auguſt* the Generall and Army march in triumph through the City, moſt of the Souldiers having Bays in their hatts in token of Victory.

Immediately Sir *Thomas Fairfax* is made Conſtable of the Tower, by which he hath power to conſtitute a Lieutenant, and accordingly the Honour was conferd on Colonell *Titchburne*.

Maſſey and *Poyns* fly over into *Holland*.

The Generall preſents a Declaration to the Houſe of the Grounds and reaſons of the Armyes March.

The Lords and Commons Null all thoſe Votes that paſt during the time that the Major part of the Houſe went to the Generall.

On the twelfth of *Auguſt* was appointed a thankſgiving for the preſervation of the City.

His Majeſty was remov'd to *Oatlands*; on the 23 of *Auguſt*, he went to *Sion* to viſit his Children, and returned that night.

Upon his Majeſties deſire he was remov'd to *Hampton Court*, and his Children orderd to be with him.

Both

Both Houſes order the Caſting downe of the Workes about the City, the maintaining whereof was very chargeable and burthenſome.

The Houſes Vote of ſending Propoſitions to his Majeſty; to which the *Scotch* Commiſſioners conſent, and on the ſeventh of *February* 1647. they were carried to his Majeſty by Major Generall *Browne*, and the *Scotch* Commiſſioners, who were to bring an anſwer in ſix dayes; upon the Receit of the Propoſitions, he deſired to know whether they were the ſame with thoſe he received at *Newcaſtle*; it was anſwered, there was onely ſome little alterations as to perſons that ſerved him in the late war; then he deſired to know of the *Scotch* Commiſſioners, if they concur'd, they anſwer'd they did.

His Majeſty ſaid they were matters of Great concernment, and requir'd ſerious conſideration, but he would take care that they ſhould have an anſwer within the time limited.

The Committee and Commiſſioners order 6000 foote, 2400 Horſe, and 500 Dragoones, to be ſent into *Ireland*, and care was taken to provide all neceſſary proviſions.

The Commons likewiſe Order a moneths Gratuity to be given to the Army.

They likewiſe Vote a ſtanding Army of 18000 foote, 7200 Horſe, and a 1000 Dragoones be kept up as a ſtanding Army for *England*.

An answer came from his Majesty, which was by the House Voted not satisfactory.

The Commons took into consideration the Actions of diverse Eminent Citizens in *London* tending to a new war, Vote a Charge of high nature be brought in; and the Lord Mayor, Alderman *Adams*, Alderman *Langham*, Alderman *Bunce*, and Sheriffe *Cullam*, with diverse other active Citizens were taken into Custody; diverse Lords were committed to the Black Rod, as the Earle of *Lincolne*, Earle of *Suffolke*, Lord *Barkley*, Lord *Willowby*, Lord *Maynard*, Lord *Hunsden*.

September the 28. 1647. The Commons once more Vote to send to his Majesty, and to that purpose they considered of severall Propositions; That about Religion being the maine thing; They also Vote his Majesty be desired to give his consent to such Act or Acts of Parliament, as shal be presented to him for setling of *Presbyterian* Government, according to the matter of severall Ordinances of Parliament, for the Directory or Church-Government to continue for the space of three yeares, from the time that the King shall give his consent to such Act or Acts.

They likewise Voted the Common-prayer-booke shall not be used in private.

The Souldiers about his Majesty are very civill, permitting his Majesty to Hunt with the Duke of *Richmond*, Marquesse of *Hartford*, Marquesse

queſſe of *Ormond*, Earle of *Southampton*, and diverſe others of the Nobility, without any Interruption.

His Majeſty ſent a Letter to the Generall, deſiring his Children to ſtay with him a night or two, it being too great a Journey to goe and come to S*t James's* in a day; which he communicates to the Parliament.

They Order the Earle of *Northumberland* to ſatisfie his Majeſty about his Children.

The Heads of the Propoſitions agreed upon by both Houſes, to be preſented to his Majeſty, were theſe.

1. *The Militia for twenty yeares in the hands of Parliament, or Committee of Parliament, in Intervalls.*

2. *Money be raiſed to pay the publique debts of the Kingdome.*

3. *All Honours beſtowed by his Majeſty ſince the* 22 *of* May 1642. *to be Null and Voyd.*

4. *Nulling his Majeſties Great Seale, and confirming that of the Parliament.*

5. *Totally to aboliſh Biſhops, and their Hierarchy, roote and branch.*

6. *All their Lands to be ſould for the payment of publique debts, and other neceſſary Charges of the Kingdome.*

7. *Making voyd the ceſſation of* Ireland.

8. *The Election of all the Chiefe Officers of truſt,*

as

as Treasurer, Admirall, be by Parliament, and they to hold during their good behaviour. The Deputy of Ireland *to be appointed by Parliament, and to hold during pleasure.*

9 *The* Presbyterian *Government to be settled as to the Religious service of God.*

10. *The Treaties betwixt* England *and* Scotland *be confirm'd, as it is now agreed.*

11. *Justices of peace and Sheriffs to be Chosen by Grand Jury men.*

12. *That his Majesty restore all such servants to their places, as have been put out for adhering to the Parliament.*

13. *That his Majesty passe an Act for the sale of* Deane *and* Chapters *Lands, and the money to be disposed of, as both Houses of Parliament shall think fit.*

14. *That his Majesty shall not give pardon of Life to seven excepted persons.*

15. *That his Majesty passe an Act for the disforresting all the Forrests and Chases in* England.

16. *That his Majesty passe an Act for securing the arreares of the Souldiers of the Army, and all other Souldiers that have serv'd the Parliament, and those arreares to be payd out of the Remainder of* Bishops *Lands.*

17. *That the* Court of Wards *be null, and that his Majesty have* 50000 *l.* per Annum *in lieu of it.*

18. *A*

18. *A period may be ſet to this Parliament.*

All which being Granted, His Majeſty, the Queene, and Prince, to Enjoy their revenues, and the King to Governe.

The Commons order diverſe of his Majeſties old ſervants be diſcharg'd, and that there be a ſtricter Guard then uſuall.

The *Scotch* Commiſſioners ſent a Letter to the Houſe of the deep ſenſe of his Majeſties Impriſonment, withall deſiring his Majeſty may come to *London*, to treat with Honour, Freedome, and Safety, and adviſe that it would withall be the moſt profitable and effectuall meanes for attaining of a happy peace, and ſetling Religion, the Reſtoring of his Majeſty to his juſt Rights, and continuing and ſtrengthning a good underſtanding with both Nations.

Which Letter was layd aſide.

News was brought to the Houſe, that his Majeſty had made an eſcape out of his reſtraint from *Hampton Court*. The manner thus;

November 11. 1647. He according to his cuſtome, withdrew himſelfe to be private a little before Evening prayer, ſtaying ſomewhat longer then was uſuall, it was taken notice of, yet at firſt without ſuſpition; but he not coming forth ſuddenly, there were feares, which increaſed by the Crying of a Grayhound ſeverall times within in the room; and upon ſearch it was found that the

King

King was gone, and by the way of *Paradice*, a place ſo call'd in the garden, much about the cloſe of the Evening. He left on the Table three Papers, one to the Parliament, one to the Commiſſioners, and a third to Colonell *Whaly*; one of them was as followeth.

Liberty being that which in all times hath been, but eſpecially now is the condition, the aym and deſire of all men, common reaſon ſhews that Kings, leſſe then any, ſhould endure captivity; yet I call God to witneſſe with what patience I have endur'd a tedious reſtraint, which ſo long as I had any hopes that this ſort of my ſuffering might conduce to the peace of my Kingdomes, or the hindring of more effuſion of blood, I did willingly undergoe; but now finding by too certaine proofes, that this my continued patience, muſt not onely turne to my perſonall ruine, but likewiſe be of more prejudice then furtherance to the publique good, I thought I was bound as well by naturall as politicall obligations, to ſeeke my ſafety, by retiring my ſelfe ſometime from the publique view, both of my friends and enemies, and I appeale to all indifferent men to judge,

judge, if I have not juſt cauſe to free my ſelfe from the hands of thoſe, who change their principles with their condition, and who are not aſham'd openly to Intend the deſtruction of Nobility, by taking away their negative voyce, and with whom the Levellers *Doctrine is rather countenanc't then puniſht, and for their Intentions to my perſon, their charging and putting more ſtrict Guards upon me, with the diſcharging moſt of all thoſe ſervants of mine, who formerly they willingly admitted to waite on me, doe ſufficiently declare; nor would I have this my retirement miſ-interpreted, for I ſhall earneſtly and unceſſantly endeavour thoſe things for a ſafe & well-grounded peace, where ever I am, or ſhall be (and that as much as may be) without the effuſion of more Chriſtian blood, for which how many times have I deſired, yea preſt to be heard, & yet no ear given me; and can any reaſonable man thinke that according to the ordinary courſe of affaires, there can be a ſetled peace without it, or that God will bleſſe thoſe who refuſe to heare their own King, ſurely no. Nay I muſt further add, that (beſides what concernes my ſelfe) unleſſe*

all

all other chiefe Interests have not onely a hearing, but likewise just satisfaction given unto them, (to wit, the Presbyterians, Independents, Army, those who have adhered to me, and even the Scots) I say there cannot (I speake not of miracles, it being in my opinion a simple perswasion in such cases to expect or trust to them) be a safe and lasting peace. Now I cannot deny but that as my personall security is the urgent cause of my retirement, so I call God to witnesse, that the publique peace is no lesse before my eyes, and I can finde no better way to expresse this my profession (I know not what a wiser man can do) then by desiring and urging, that all chiefe Interests may be heard, to the end each may have satisfaction; as for example, the Army (for the rest though necessary, yet I suppose are not difficult to content) ought in my judgement to injoy the Liberty of their consciences, and to have an act of oblivion and Indempnity, which shall extend to all the rest of my Subjects, and that all their arreares shall be speedily and duly payd, this I will undertake to doe, so I may be heard, and that I may not be hindred from u-

sing

ing such lawfull and honeſt meanes as I ſhall hooſe.

To conclude, Let me be heard with free-dome, Honour and ſafety, and I ſhall inſtant-y breake through this cloud of retirement, nd ſhall ſhew my ſelfe ready to be Pater Pa-riæ.

Charles R.

His abſence ſtruck all into amazement; The Parliament order his neere attendance to be un-der reſtraint untill examination; all the Sea-ports o be layd to prevent his Majeſties Tranſporta-ion.

They likewiſe Voted that whoſoever ſhall con-eale his Majeſty, ſhall forfeit Life and eſtate.

Every one was big with Expectation to know what was become of his Majeſty.

On the 15 of *October*, 1647. Information was rought to the Houſe that his Majeſty was ſafe t the *Iſle of wight*, and had put himſelfe into the rotection of Colonell *Hamond*, then Governour f the Iſland.

His Majeſty told the Governour, that there as a deſigne againſt his perſon, which moved im to fly thither for ſafety.

The Lords and Commons were well ſatisfied ith his Majeſties being there; and Order thoſe ſervants

all other chiefe Intereſts have not onely a hearing, but likewiſe juſt ſatisfaction given unto them, (to wit, the Presbyterians, Independents, Army, thoſe who have adhered to me, and even the Scots) I ſay there cannot (I ſpeake not of miracles, it being in my opinion a ſimple perſwaſion in ſuch caſes to expect or truſt to them) be a ſafe and laſting peace. Now I cannot deny but that as my perſonall ſecurity is the urgent cauſe of my retirement, ſo I call God to witneſſe, that the publique peace is no leſſe before my eyes, and I can finde no better way to expreſſe this my profeſſion (I know not what a wiſer man can do) then by deſiring and urging, that all chiefe Intereſts may be heard, to the end each may have ſatisfaction; as for example, the Army (for the reſt though neceſſary, yet I ſuppoſe are not difficult to content) ought in my judgement to injoy the Liberty of their conſciences, and to have an act of oblivion and Indempnity, which ſhall extend to all the reſt of my Subjects, and that all their arreares ſhall be ſpeedily and duly payd, this I will undertake to doe, ſo I may be heard, and that I may not be hindred from u-

ſing

ſing ſuch lawfull and honeſt meanes as I ſhall chooſe.

To conclude, Let me be heard with freedome, Honour and ſafety, and I ſhall inſtantly breake through this cloud of retirement, and ſhall ſhew my ſelfe ready to be Pater Patriæ.

Charles R.

His abſence ſtruck all into amazement; The Parliament order his neere attendance to be under reſtraint untill examination; all the Sea-ports to be layd to prevent his Majeſties Tranſportation.

They likewiſe Voted that whoſoever ſhall conceale his Majeſty, ſhall forfeit Life and eſtate.

Every one was big with Expectation to know what was become of his Majeſty.

On the 15 of *October*, 1647. Information was brought to the Houſe that his Majeſty was ſafe at the *Iſle of wight*, and had put himſelfe into the protection of Colonell *Hamond*, then Governour of the Iſland.

His Majeſty told the Governour, that there was a deſigne againſt his perſon, which moved him to fly thither for ſafety.

The Lords and Commons were well ſatisfied with his Majeſties being there; and Order thoſe ſervants

ſervants that attended him at *Hampton Court*, to attend him there.

On the 18 of *November*, his Majeſty ſent a Letter to the Parliament, and another to the *Scotch* Commiſſioners, giving them to underſtand of his being, as he apprehended, in more ſafety there then at *Hampton Court*, and doth profeſſe his readineſſe as to an agreement, and though he cannot conſent to alter the Government by Archbiſhops and Biſhops, neither as a Chriſtian, becauſe Apoſtolicall, nor as a King, becauſe at his Coronation he ſwore to maintaine this order, yet he is willing to conſent, that their power be ſo limited that they be not grievous to tender Conſciences. For the ſale of Church Lands, he accounts it ſacriledge, that it ſubverts the Intent of the Donors, diſcourages learning; He is willing *Presbytery* be continued for three yeares, provided thoſe that cannot concur be not obliged, and that a free debate be had with the Divines at *Weſtminſter*, and twenty that he ſhall appoint, to reſolve how Church Government hereafter ſhall be ſetled, with full Liberty to all that differ, yet without toleration of Popery, Atheiſme, or blaſphemy.

He is willing to put the *Militia* both by Sea and Land to be diſpoſed of by his two Houſes, or who they ſhall appoint for his Reigne, provided it returne to his Succeſſors; that it be limited

to

to ſuppreſſe diſturbance in this Kingdome, and againſt forraine Invaſion, and that the power goe from his Majeſty by Grant of Patent to thoſe that act.

He is willing and conſenting to the payment of the arreares of the Army, and that he will undertake to raiſe 400000 *l.* in eighteen moneths, and if that will not doe, he is willing to give way for the ſale of Forreſt Lands; and for payment of other debts his Majeſty is willing to paſſe ſuch an Act as both Houſes ſhall conſent to.

He is willing the Parliament doe chooſe privie Councellers during his Reigne, provided they have their Pattent from him.

He is willing the *Court of Wards* be taken away, provided there be a valuable conſideration allow'd, and that care may be had of his Children, who were by that Court cared for.

And that the memory of theſe late ſad diſtractions may be quite wiped away, he is willing to Null all Oaths, Declarations, Proclamations, againſt both or either Houſes of Parliament, or any Inditement againſt any for adhering to them.

And his Majeſty offers as the beſt expedient, an Act of oblivion to all his ſubjects.

And although his Majeſty cannot in Honour and Juſtice make voyd all his Acts and Grants under his Seale, ſince the 22 of *May* 1642. yet

he doubts not but upon peruſall, to give full ſatisfaction to his two Houſes in that.

And thus he conceives he hath ſatisfied all Intereſts, for other things that may be propoſ'd to him from both Houſes of Parliament, on his part he moves earneſtly for a perſonall Treaty at *London*; all which being done, he believes the Houſes will thinke it reaſonable to thinke of ſuch Propoſalls as were made by the Army, touching the ſucceſſion of Parliaments, and their due Election.

For the Kingdome of *Scotland*, he is ready to give ſatisfaction to what ſhall be propounded.

Not long after the *Scots* ſent a Letter to the Parliament, that they Regret that no anſwer is given to their Letter, and that they are inform'd that Propoſitions are to be ſent without allowing any competent time to conſider. They take notice of his Majeſties being carried from *Holmbey*, and his juſt cauſe of going from *Hampton Court*. And in regard the Kingdome of *Scotland* are highly concern'd in the ſafety of his Majeſties perſon, and in duty bound to doe their beſt to prevent his ruine, they therefore deſire his Majeſty may come to *London*, to treate with Honour, freedome and ſafety, and that neither he nor his Parliament be Inviron'd with Souldiers, that ſo their conſultations being free, all differences may be ended by a perſonall Treaty, the beſt way to

ſettle

ſettle a ſure and laſting peace.

See the uncertainty of men in the world, that thoſe very *Scots* that had not long before declared, that it was altogether Inconvenient for the Parliament to admit his Majeſty to come to *London*, untill he had given ſatisfaction to their juſt and reaſonable deſires, ſhould now deſire the King to come to *London*, which at that time ſwarm'd with Malignants, apt for any tumult, nay the Parliament it ſelfe at that time could not ſit with ſafety, without an Army to guard them.

On the 23 of *November*, 1647. both Houſes Voted not to have any perſonall Treaty with his Majeſty.

Yet after three dayes debate in the Houſe, they conclude that foure Propoſitions be drawne up in forme of Acts, to be ſent to his Majeſty to ſigne, which when he had ſigned, they would admit a perſonall Treaty at *London*. The Propoſitions were as followeth.

1. *That a Bill may be paſt into an Act by his Majeſty for ſetling the* Militia *of the Kingdome.*

2. *A Bill be paſt by his Majeſty, calling in all his Declarations, Oathes, Proclamations againſt the Parliament, and thoſe that have adhered to them.*

3. *To paſſe an Act that thoſe Lords who were made after the Great Seale was carried to* Oxford, *may be made uncapable of ſitting in the Houſe of Peeres thereby.*

4. *That power may be given to the two Houſes to adjurne, as the two Houſes of Parliament ſhall thinke fit.*

On the 30 of *November*, the King ſent a Letter to the Generall and Army, by Sir *John Barkley*, deſiring their furtherance of a perſonall treaty, with a promiſe of Recompence when all ſhould be ſetled. To which anſwer was return'd, that they had wholly left it to the Parliament, and that they would be paſſive.

The Army ſent a large Declaration to both Houſes, taxing them with neglect, contrary to promiſe, and laying forth the wants of the Army, by reaſon they had not expedited their pay, which muſt neceſſitate them to take free quarter, and be burthenſome to the ſubjects, if not by them timely prevented.

His Majeſty ſent another Letter to the Lords, wherein he expreſſeth himſelfe, that if any thing had been of more concernment then the peace of this Kingdome, he would with patience have expected an anſwer to his former Letter, but his tender affection to his ſubjects welfare, hath prevalency

valency with him to preſſe a perſonall Treaty, and Intimates, that if the Houſes pleaſe that he come among them, it will no doubt ſpeed a good end.

The Lords and Commons according to their former order, Vote the Lord *Denbigh*, and the Lord *Mountagne* for the Upper Houſe, Mr *Liſle*, Mr *Goodwin*, Mr *Kemp*, and Mr *Bulncley*, for the Commons, to carry the four Propoſitions to his Majeſty, which if he ſigne they will admit of a perſonall Treaty.

The *Scots* Commiſſioners likewiſe went to his Majeſty, and after ſome conference with him, declare againſt the four Bills to this effect;

That they had endeavour'd by all wayes and meanes with the Parliament of England *for the furthering of a happy peace, but having ſeene the Propoſitions now brought to his Majeſty, they apprehend them to be prejudiciall to Religion, the Crowne, and the Union betwixt both Kingdomes, and therefore in the name of the Kingdome of* Scotland *declare their diſſent.*

Colonell *Hamond* wrote a Letter to the Parliament, that he could not ſecure his Majeſty, unleſſe they would allow him more ſtrength, there being ſo great a concourſe into the Iſleland; upon which the Commons order, that his Majeſties perſon be ſecured, and more Forces be ſent for the ſecurity of the Iſland.

The Commiſſioners return'd with a large Meſſage from his Majeſty, ſhewing the Grounds and reaſons why he cannot paſſe any thing till the whole Treaty be concluded on, profeſſing he is willing to give any reaſonable ſatisfaction to whatſoever ſhall be requir'd.

He now againe earneſtly preſſes *for a perſonall Treaty, of which he will not deſpaire, there being no viſible way left for the Kingdomes peace, but by it; However, his Majeſty is at peace and quietneſſe within himſelfe, in having fulfild the offices both of a Chriſtian, and a King, and will patiently waite the good pleaſure of Almightie God, to incline the hearts of his two Houſes to conſider their King, and compaſſionate their fellow ſubjects miſeries.*

Its very obſervable that his Majeſty received the Parliaments Commiſſioners very gratefully, deſiring them all to be aſſiſtants to him in promoting a wel-grounded peace, the expreſſion he ſaid was theirs, but it was a very good one; he tould them, there were many Intereſts to be conſidered of, *Viz.* the Parliament, Army, and *Scots*, he deſir'd all might be conſidered; but when he was inform'd of a diſſenting Declaration of the *Scots*, he tould them, he was very ſorry for it, and he hoped they might agree in the maine, though they might differ in circumſtances. His Majeſty deliver'd his Meſſage to the Commiſſioners open, with Injunction to keep it ſecret till they had

had deliver'd it to the Parliament.

There hapned a tumult at *Newport* in the *Iſle of Wight*, diverſe declaring for the King, and one Captain *Burleigh* cauſed a drum to be beaten up for the ſervice of his Majeſty; the Mayor and others that came to his aſſiſtance, fell upon them, diſperſt them, took the Captain, who was afterwards executed.

This tumult cauſed the Governour of the Iſland immediately to diſcharge all ſuch as had ayded and aſſiſted his Majeſty in the late War againſt the Parliament.

Munday the third of *January*, 1657. The Commons took into conſideration his Majeſties Meſſage, and finding the ſame as it appeares to them, not ſatisfactory, nor that he hath any Inclination to a compoſure, it was put to the Queſtion, *Whether any addreſſes ſhould be made hereafter*; after many houres debate it was Reſolv'd;

That 1. *No addreſſes ſhall hereafter be made to him by the Parliament of* England.

2. *That none ſhall on paine of Treaſon, make any addreſſe without leave from the Parliament.*

3. *That no written Paper, Meſſage, or Declaration, be received from his Majeſty on penalty of Treaſon.*

They likewiſe Vote, that Colonel *Hamond* and Sir *William Conſtable*, ſhall have power to diſplace any man from his Majeſty whom they ſhall thinke fit.

Immediately they take care for the managing of the affaires of the Kingdome, by compleating the Committee of *Darby-House*, who were to transact the whole businesse of the Kingdome; they Vote the Earle of *Kent* in the roome of the Earle of *Essex* who was dead.

Mr *Nathaniell Fines* and Mr *John Evelin* in the roomes of Sir *Philip Stapleton* dead, and Mr *Glin*, who was sequestred the House; Sir *William Waller* was continued.

The Committee being compleated were 21 in number, *Viz.* the Lord of *Northumberland*, Earle of *Kent*, Earle of *Warwick*, Earle of *Manchester*, Vicount *Say* and *Seale*, Lord *Wharton*, and Lord *Roberts*; For the Commons, Mr *Perepoint*, Mr *Nathaniell Fines*, Sir *Henry Vane*, senior, Sir *Arthur Haslerig*, Sir *Gilbert Gerard*, Sir *William Ermine*, Sir *John Evelin*, Sir *Henry Vane*, junior, Sir *William Waller*, Mr *Crew*, Mr Soliciter, Sr *John*, Mr *Wallop*, Mr *Samuel Browne*, Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell*.

A Generall Councell of the Army being met at *Windsor*, they were very Joyfull, and unanimously approv'd of the Votes of the House touching his Majesty, and ordred two Declarations to be drawne up, one to shew their good liking of the Houses proceedings, with promise to ayd and assist them in setling the Kingdome, yea without the King, or against the King; the second,

cond, for the maintenance of the Peerage of *England*, with Reſolution to ſtand by Lords and Commons to the laſt man.

On the 17 of *January*, the Votes for non-addreſſes paſt the Lords Houſe; They Ordred Colonel *Barkſteds* Regiment to quarter in *White Hall*, Colonel *Rich* his Regiment of Horſe to quarter in the *Mews*.

His Majeſty having heard of the Reſolves of both Houſes, continues very chearfull, and is much retired.

The *Scots* Commiſſioners deſire leave to Returne.

The Houſe of Lords added four of their order to the Committee of *Darby-Houſe*, *Viz.* the Earle of *Salſbury*, the Lord *Mograve*, Earle of *Denbigh*, and Lord *Howard*.

The Earle of *Pembrooke* was Voted Chancellor of *Oxford*.

Both Houſes Vote that the Committee of *Darby-Houſe* have plenipotence to order and diſpoſe of the Army Commanded by Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, as they ſhall thinke fit.

The Commons conſider'd of Commiſſioners to goe to *Scotland*, to acquaint the Parliament of *Scotland* with the miſcarriages of their Commiſſioners here. And Order Mr *Goodwin*, Mr *Aſhurſt*, Mr *Brian Stapleton*, and Colonel *Birch*, to receive their Inſtructions from the Committee of *Darby-Houſe*.

The

The Lords joyne the Earle of *Nottingham*, and the Earle of *Stamford* to goe with them.

The second of *February*, the Commons past an Order, that all the servants lately made by the Commissioners, attending his Majesty, be removed, and that the Generall Sir *Thomas Fairfax* place such about his Majesty as he should thinke fit, provided they exceed not thirty.

They likewise order'd a Declaration to be drawne up, to satisfie the Kingdome of the Grounds and Reasons of their passing the Votes for non-addresses.

The 21 of *February*, Judge *Jenkins* was brought to the Bar of the House, where he refused to kneele; a Charge was read against him, That he had condemn'd or past sentence upon men to be hang'd, drawne and quarter'd, for not assisting against the Parliament: That he tooke up Armes himselfe, that he stir'd up others to levy war and assist against the Parliament, that he accused the Parliament, and charg'd them with counterfeiting the Great Seale; and being requir'd to speak what he had to say for himselfe, he answer'd, that they had no power to try him, he assur'd with confidence the *Militia* was in the King alone; he said Kings did not formerly covenant to maintaine the Law, but onely to be mercifull to the people: He endeavoured to terrifie the Parliament with his Majesties numerous Issue in Geniollogy,

ollogy, he pray'd the Laws might be protected, he ſaith there can be no Laws without a King, and that there is none in *Venice* nor the *United Provinces*; for his ill deportment and words, which were indeed a breach of the priviledge of the Houſe, he was fined 1000 *l* and the Houſe Voted a Charge to be brought in againſt him.

His Majeſty at *Careſbrooke* Caſtle is very much dejected and diſcontented at his confinement, and the removall of his old ſervants; he will not permit his haire nor beard to be medled withall, but by a Barbar of his own chooſing, by which meanes he is growne very hairy.

The *Scots* Commiſſioners Report to their Parliament, much to the prejudice of the Parliament of *England*, touching their proceedings with the King.

The Lords and Commons Concur, that no forces be raiſed in *London*, nor ten miles round, but by ſpeciall warrant from the Committee of *Darby-Houſe*.

The Houſe being Inform'd that one Colonell *Poyer*, Governour of *Pembroke* Caſtle, had refuſed to deliver it up, being required thereunto by Letters from the Generall, Order that if the ſaid Colonell *Poyer* ſhall not within twelve houres after notice hereof, ſurrender the Caſtle, with all the Armes and Ammunition therein, that then the ſaid Colonell *Poyer*, and all that ſhall adhere to him,

him, are hereby declared Traytors, and Rebells; and the Generall is hereby required to reduce the ſaid Caſtle, and to bring the ſaid Colonell *Poyer* and his adherents to Juſtice, and the Generall was requir'd to ſend this Order, that the Colonell might not plead excuſe.

Colonell *Langhurne* likewiſe raiſed a body of men, and came to the aſſiſtance of Colonell *Poyer*, and had gathered together a conſiderable body of men neere 2000 Horſe and foote.

They publiſh a Declaration of their Reſolutions to eſtabliſh his Majeſty in his full power and dignity.

The Generall Order'd thirty Companyes of Horſe and foote to ſuppreſſe them, under the Command of Colonel *Horton*.

The King though ſet aſide, and confin'd to the *Iſle of Wight*, was more formidable this Summer then ever he was ſince the beginning of the late troubles; for the very name of a King was now grown into great credit with the people throughout the Kingdome, and by it not onely tumults, but Armyes were raiſed.

A mutiny hapned at *Bury* about a Maypole; ſome diſcontented perſons declare for the King; the Houſe order the Generall to ſend ſome forces, who beſieged it, and after ſome time was delivered up to mercy.

Chepſtow was likewiſe ſurprized for the King.

On

On the 22 of *Aprill*, the Earle of *Northumberland* Inform'd the Houſe of the eſcape of the Duke of *Yorke* from St *James's* ; The manner thus ; The Earle went, as his cuſtome was, to attend the Duke at eight a clock at night, after ſome ſtay the Duke came from his brothers Chamber ; when the Earle was gone the Duke went out againe , as his manner was , in way of play, to obſcure himſelfe , that his Gentlemen might ſeeke him , which accordingly they did, but could not find him, upon ſearch they Informe the Earle, who upon enquiry diſcovers that he had borrowed the Key of the Garden doore the day before of the Gardner ; as alſo there was diſcovery made of his footſteps.

The Parliament in *Scotland* order a Committee for ſafety, who adviſe that an Army of 40000 men be forthwith Levied for the preſervation of his Majeſty and Kingdome of *Scotland*, notwithſtanding diverſe Lords, Knights and Gentlemen, Members of the Parliament, Remonſtrate of their utter diſlike of it.

Immediately the Parliament of *England* Order the fortifying of *Newcaſtle* and *Hull*, to prevent the *Scots* Invaſion.

The Parliament men being ſummon'd to attend the Houſe, were cald over, and found to be neere 320 men.

A Petition was preſented to the Parliament from

from the City, *Requiring the Armyes removall from the City, and that the Posts and Chaines may be put up for the safety of the City, and that Major Generall* Skippon *be appointed Major Generall for the City, and all the Forces within the late Lines of Communication, with resolutions to adhere to them according to the Covenant.*

Immediately the Houses approved of Major Generall *Skippon*, and orderd him to put the *Militia* in Execution, and the Posts and Chaines to be set up as formerly; They likewise Voted all the Members that had not taken the Covenant to take it.

On the 28 of *Aprill*, the Commons proceeded in setling the Kingdome, and Voted that they would endeavour to continue the Government by King, Lords and Commons, and that they might have Liberty to debate such Votes as had past concerning the King; they likewise Voted that the Propositions presented to his Majesty at *Hampton Court*, were subject matter for a settlement.

The second of *May*, the Generall sent a Letter to the Parliament, approving of the Cities choice in Electing Major Generall *Skippon*, Major Generall for the City; and finding the City desirous of the Armyes removall from them, had sent an order for Colonell *Barkſted* to draw his Regiment out of *White Hall*, and Colonell *Rich*

to

to draw off his Regiment from the *Mews*. He likewiſe deſir'd them that they would provide a Guard for themſelves.

The Common Councell of the City Order 600 *l. per Annum* for their Major Generall, and a Guard for the Parliament, that ſo the Army might draw off.

A conſiderable party of *Scots* and *Engliſh* ſurpriz'd *Barwick*; The manner thus; The party that came was much about an hundred, with ſwords drawne, and piſtolls Cockt, entred the Towne on the South ſide, as ſoone as they had paſt the bridge, they drew it up, ſeaze on the Mayor, and all other eminent perſons.

Drums were likewiſe beaten up in *Colcheſter*, and ſeverall Townes in *Suffolke*, for the ſervice of his Majeſty.

On the third of *May*, Letters were brought by Colonell *Marſhall* to both Houſes from the Parliament of *Scotland*, giving them to underſtand their reſults concerning *England*; and withall, that he had but fifteen dayes time allotted him to ſtay for an Anſwer.

The Heads of the *Scots* Declaration were theſe, *That his Majeſty may come to* London, *or ſome of his Houſes neere, and that with ſafety*; *That Reparation be made for his carrying away, or ſatisfaction, by puniſhing them that did it*; *That the Army under the Lord Fairfax be disbanded*; *That Preſbytery*

bytery be ſetled, Sectaries puniſht; That all Members of the Houſe be reſtored.

The ſame day the Commons Conſulted whether they ſhould in the ſettlement of the Kingdome, take in the *Scots* or not, or whether to make addreſſes to his Majeſty againe or not.

May the fourth, came above a thouſand Petitioners on Horſeback, and neere as many more on foote, out of *Eſſex*, to Petition the Parliament for a perſonall Treaty with the King, and to expedite a courſe for the ſatisfaction of the Army, and their disbanding.

The Lords returne Anſwer, that they will ſeriouſly conſider of their Petition; and the Commons take notice of their good affection to the Parliament, deſiring them to returne, and to ſatisfie their Country.

May the fifth, The Commons agreed, firſt, that they will keep their Covenant and Treaty with the Kingdome of *Scotland*.

Secondly, That they will be ready to Joyne with the Kingdome of *Scotland*, upon the Propoſitions agreed to be ſent to his Majeſty at *Hampton Court*. And that a Letter ſhould be ſent to the Parliament of *Scotland* about the ſurprize of *Barwick*, by ſome that were enemies to both Kingdomes.

They likewiſe orderd the ſeven Northerne Counties be put into a poſture of defence, and that

that the Committee of *Darby-Houſe* take care to pay them.

At a Councell of War at *Windſor*, it was orderd that Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell* goe to *Wales* to ſuppreſſe *Poyer* and *Langhorne*, others for the ſecurity of the North with what ſtrength they could.

Colonell *Horton* ſent a Letter of the defeate of the *Welſh* Army, conſiſting of 8000 foote and 400 Horſe, who being terrified with the news of Lieutenant Generall *Cromwells* coming, Reſolv'd to fight *Horton*, which he nothing more deſired; they fell upon him, but he ſoone Routed them, took 150 Officers, 3000 Common Souldiers; for which a day of thankeſgiving is appointed.

On the 16 of *May*, diverſe hundreds came out of *Surrey* with a Petition, much in the ſame nature with that of *Eſſex*; ſome bickering hapned betwixt the Country-men and Souldiers, in ſo much that from words they came to blowes, and ſome of the Country-men were kild.

The *Scots* goe on amaine to raiſe their Army, Duke *Hamilton*, a ſelfiſh unfortunate man is made Generall (Generall *Leſley* is contented with a penſion, and willing to be quiet) The Earle of *Callendar* Lieutenant Generall.

Their Levies goe on amaine, they have orderd forty dayes pay at their Generall Randevouz.

In the meane time, Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*

with a ſmall body of Horſe goes on the *Scotch* ſide of *Tweed* to *Carlile*, to raiſe men, in expectation to joyne with Sir *Philip Muſgrave* his forces in *Cumberland* and *Weſtmerland*, who being well reſpected, the Country flockt to him amaine.

And now the Kings party began to ſwell big with expectation, not looking upon themſelves as vanquiſhed, but rather Conquerors.

The Southerne part of the Kingdome was not free from Inſurrections, for news was brought to the Parliament, that 600 diſaffected perſons had ſeazed and ſecured *Rocheſter*, poſſeſt themſelves of the City, planted Ordnance on the bridge, and compeld all that came, to ſigne their Petition, and increaſed to the number of 10000.

The City of *London* was likewiſe backward in raiſing a Guard for the Parliament, to relieve the two Regiments, which the Generall then wanted.

In *Cornwall* likewiſe were Inſurrections, and diverſe diſaffected were landed; Sir *Hardreſſe Waller* ſent a party of Horſe and foote to ſubdue them.

The Commons Vote, that if his Majeſty will grant the *Militia*, ſettle Religion, and Recall all Proclamations and Declarations, they will Treat with him.

Diverſe forces orderd Northward, were cald back

back to ſuppreſſe the Kentiſh Inſurrection.

Chepſtow Caſtle was retaken by Colonell *Ewer*.

Sir *Thomas Glenham* had ſeazed on *Carlile* for the King, and Sir *Marmaduke Langdale* was come as far as *Appleby* with a formidable Army.

Major General *Lambert* marcht up and down, to prevent him from Injuring the Country.

The Generall muſters his Army at *Hounſlow* heath, he ſends a party round by *Suſſex* to relieve *Dover* Caſtle, then beſieged by the Kentiſh men.

He with the reſt marcht into *Kent*, ſeverall ſmall skirmiſhes hapned betwixt both partyes, he comes to *Maidſtone*, which he found to be ſtoutly man'd, well provided with Ordinance and barracadoed, and the Enemy drawne up into a body; it was thought unconvenient to ingage the body, and leave the Towne unattempted, in which were the moſt reſolute perſons.

A party of old Souldiers were drawne out to face the Towne, whilſt the body was drawne up, ready to receive the Enemy.

The old Souldiers aſſaulted the Towne by ſeven at night, where they met with men of like Reſolution, there being the ſtouteſt men of the Enemies Army, Apprentices and Seamen, and ſuch as had been in Armes for the King.

The fight continued for ſix houres, they vali-

antly diſputed in every ſtreete; at laſt the Towne is taken, with the loſs of ſixty men; in it were taken 1300 priſoners, diverſe of quality, 400 Horſe, eight pieces of Ordinance, with good ſtore of booty.

The Generall ſhewed perſonall Valour by Charging in his ſlippers.

Many of the Kentiſh forces march over *Rochester* bridge toward *London*, where on Black heath they muſter a conſiderable Army, whither many apprentices and reſolute perſons repaire, under the Command of old *Goring*.

The *Eſſex* men had by this time ſecured the Committee men, and ſent to require an anſwer to their Petition, to which the Parliament ſpeedily ſend an anſwer.

The Sea-men likewiſe Revolt, and refuſe to receive the Earle of *Warwick*, but upon their own tearmes; they likewiſe ſent Vice-Admirall *Rainſborough* on ſhoare, and unanimouſly declare for the King.

Whilſt the Earle of *Warwick* ſhews his affection for the Parliament, his brother the Earle of *Holland* unfortunately riſeth in armes with the Duke of *Buckingham*, and the Lord *Francis*, who with 500 Horſe at *Kingſton*, take the advantage of the Armyes dividing.

But by the care and induſtry of Sir *Miles Liveſey*, who fell on them, they were put to flight; The

The Lord *Francis* refuſing quarter, was kild; Major *Dalbere*, and diverſe others were kild: the Earle of *Holland* fled to St *Needs*, where he was totally ſubdued, and taken by Colonell *Scroope*, and immediately ſent priſoner to *Warwick* Caſtle.

While the *Eſſex* men were requiring an act of Indempnity, Sir *Charles Lucas* was come to *Chenſford* with a party of 2000 Horſe and foote, Colonell *Whaly* was orderd to goe againſt them.

Thoſe with *Goring* being denied a paſſage over *London* bridge, come over on *Eſſex* ſide, ſecure *Bow* bridge with a ſmall party, whilſt the reſt march further into the County.

Sir *John Owen* in *North-Wales* endeavours to raiſe forces for the King, which the Sheriffe of a County Indeavoured to impede, but being too weake was taken priſoner, and his party ſuppreſt; a ſecond time, ſeverall partyes well affected to the Parliament joyne together, and with contrary ſucceſſe to the former, fell upon Sir *John Owen*, tooke him priſoner, and totally diſperſt his forces.

Pomfret Caſtle is likewiſe ſurprized by one *Morrice*.

The Generall ſpared what forces he could over into *Eſſex*, with the aſſiſtance of the well affected of the County, who purſued the Enemy

till they came to *Colcheſter*, which Towne they cloſely begirt, but diverſe times ſallyes were made out to fetch in proviſions.

The Lieutenant Generall having laine long before *Pembrooke* Caſtle, and hearing of the *Scots* on their March for *England*, and the Report of the Prince & Duke of *York* being at Sea, thought fit to give Conditions to *Poyer* and *Langhorne*, for the delivering up of the Towne and Caſtle, that thereby he might have Liberty to advance Northwards, which Conditions were accepted.

And to ſay truth, as things then ſtood, it was of a conſiderable value, as to the ſervice of the Parliament.

On the 13 of *July* Marqueſſe *Hamilton* enterd *England* with an Army of 9000 Horſe and foote, the Generality of the people of *Scotland* were wholly averſe to it, the Miniſters every where exclaiming againſt the Duke.

The Duke immediately ſent a Letter to Lieutenant Generall *Lambert* of the Grounds and Motives of their coming into *England*, which the Lieutenant Generall as ſpeedily anſwer'd.

The Parliament immediately Vote, that thoſe *Scots* that enter *England* in a Hoſtill way with authority of Parliament, are enemies to the Kingdome of *England*, and ſhall be proceeded againſt as ſuch.

July the 17. the Commons debate to what place

place his Majeſty ſhall come, and concluded the King name three places, two whereof within twenty miles of *London*, and one within ten, and the Parliament to make choice of one of the three.

Mr *Aſhurſt* comes from *Scotland* with a Declaration of the Councell of Eſtate, in which they declare that they were Invited in; upon which the Parliament Vote all thoſe that Invited them in, to be traytors.

On the 18 of *July*, the Commons conſider'd of a perſonall treaty with his Majeſty, and having duly weighed all the Inconveniences that might ariſe by his Majeſties coming to *London*, and duly conſiderd all the objections againſt his Majeſties granting the three Propoſitions before the Treaty, they reſolv'd that the Treaty ſhould be in the *Iſle of Wight*, and that it be with Honour, freedome and ſafety; they appointed a Committee to conſider of time, manner, and place.

July 30 they Vote to ſend to his Majeſty to nominate a place in the Iſland to treat in; two of the Commons were orderd to goe to his Majeſty to that purpoſe.

They likewiſe order the Earle of *Warwick* to fight with the Revolted ſhips, notwithſtanding their ſpecious Declaration.

Information was brought to the Parliament

that Colonel *Bourton* Governour of *Scarborough* Caſtle had declar'd for the King.

Major *Huntington* left the Army, having taken diſtaſt at the proceedings of ſome Grandees.

The Prince from aboard in the Downs, ſent a Letter to the Speaker of the Houſe of Peeres, relating to a Treaty with his Majeſty, and diverſe other particulars, which was laid aſide.

On the ſame day a Petition was preſented from the Court of Aldermen and Common Councell of the City of *London*, for a perſonall Treaty, his Majeſty to be freed of his reſtraint, Church Government to be ſetled, according to the Covenant, all Acts of Hoſtility to ſeaſe, to which the Commons promiſed a ſpeedy and ſatisfactory anſwer.

Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell* being joyn'd with *Lambert*, their force is 5000 Horſe and Dragoones, and 7000 foote, he ſent a Letter to the Houſe, giving them an account of his proceedings, with a returne of thanks for their care in providing for his Army.

Tinmouth Caſtle Revolted, but was ſuddenly retaken.

The Lieutenant Generall immediately marches to *Pomfret*, aſſaulted the Towne with much Reſolution, kild thirty, and took an hundred priſoners.

The Lord of *Middleſex* return'd from his Majeſty

jeſty with his anſwer, which was to this effect, *That if the peace of his Dominions were not dearer to him then any Intereſt, he had too much reaſon to take notice of ſeverall Votes that paſt againſt him, with his ſad condition ſeven moneths together; and ſets downe whatſoever he conceives is neceſſary to ſo bleſſed a worke, profeſſing he can no more treat in this condition, then a blind man judge of colours, or that he can run a race whoſe foote is tyed, and therefore deſires the recalling of thoſe Votes, that bar men from coming to him, and that all that he ſhall ſend for, for neceſſary uſe, may have leave to come unto him, and waite on him in this treaty, the place* Newport, *and that he may be in the ſame condition that he was in at* Hampton Court, *conceiving he cannot treat in honour ſo long as men are afraid to come to him; for ſafety he mentions not, as not fearing his perſon in danger, requiring the aſſiſtance of the* Scots, *and that he hath fully accepted of the treaty propoſed, and gives it all the furtherance that lies in him, by demanding the neceſſary meanes of effecting, not doubting of the Parliaments ready compliance. He conjures them as Chriſtians, and good Patriots, that they will make all poſſible expedition, by haſting downe their Commiſſioners, praying the God of peace to bleſſe all endeavours, that all his Dominions may enjoy a ſafe and happy peace.*

A deſigne was laid for the betraying of *Staffford* for the King, but by the Induſtry of Captain *Stone* it was prevented. The

The Commons upon the City Petition Order a Bill to be brought in, that Major Generall *Skippon* list no more, but by speciall Order of the House.

The Earle of *Pembrooke* was made Constable of *Windsor*-Castle, in the roome of the Earle of *Holland*.

The Lords communicate to the Commons their Votes touching the Kings Letter, which were to this purpose, That the four Votes of non-addresses formerly made by both Houses be null.

And 1. That his Majesty may have all such to come to him as are necessary for the carrying on of the Treaty on his part.

2. That he have such servants as are needfull to attend his person.

3. That the Treaty be at *Newport*.

4. That his Majesty may also invite the *Scots* to the Treaty, to treat on the Propositions at *Hampton Court*, wherein they concur'd.

5. That the number of Lords to treat be five, and the Commons to appoint ten.

6. That his Majesty may have as much Liberty as at *Hampton Court*.

Lastly, That all possible expedition may be made therein; this being apprehended to be the most necessary for the setling of a peace.

Tinmouth Castle at that time Revolted, and retaken; the manner thus; The Governour being

ing abſent, the Deputy-Governour ſends all the old Souldiers abroad in parties, He ſuddenly declares for the King, Armes all the priſoners, Invites Seamen, and other diſcontented perſons to his aſſiſtance; one making an eſcape over the walls, Informes Sir *Arthur Haſlerig* of it, who immediately ſent a party under the Command of Colonell *Aſhfeild*, alſo 100 Dragoones, who with what Ladders could be got, ſcaled the wall, Major *Cobbet* led on the forlorne, after a very hot Encounter enterd the Caſtle, put all in armes to the ſword; The Deputy-Governour was found dead.

The Prince having laine long in the Downs, and effected nothing, reſolves upon Land ſervice, to which purpoſe they land eight hundred on the Kentiſh ſhoare, diverſe of which were Reformades, and perſons of quality; Colonell *Hewſon* being orderd for the ſecurity of the Kentiſh forces, draws together what force he could, which were betwixt three and four hundred, who together with the aſſiſtance of Major *Husbands* with 100 Horſe, fell upon them, kild many, totally diſperſt them, took diverſe priſoners.

In *Herefordſhire* 200 Horſe were got together, Commanded by Sir *Henry Lingen* for the King, who ſuddenly ſurpriz'd the County troop and deſtroyd them.

The Commons fell into debate of the Heads of the

the Kings Letter concerning a treaty, they agreed to all, excepting their calling the *Scots* to their aſſiſtance, who had broke the peace, and enterd *England* in an hoſtile manner, ſecur'd the townes of *Barwick* and *Carlile*, but after a long debate, they aſſented, that the King ſhould Invite any of the Kingdome of *Scotland* to come and treate in the behalfe of that Kingdome, and that they ſhould have ſafe conduct.

They likewiſe orderd Inſtructions for Colonell *Hamond*, and order that he ſo deport himſelfe, as that the King may be in the ſame condition as at *Hampton Court*, viz. with freedome, Honour and ſafety.

The Lieutenant Generall and *Lambert* being Joyn'd, the whole Army was concluded to be 12000 fighting men. The Army march to *Giſburne*, where there was a skirmiſh betwixt Major *Rigby* and ſome part of the Enemy: The next day the Army marcht to *Stonyhurſt*, a great houſe in the way to *Preſton*, a party was drawne out commanded by Major *Sanders*, who fell on the Enemies out-guards, and took the Earle of *Connought*, a *Scotchman*, and ſix others priſoners. The next morning early the Army marcht to *Preſton*, where the whole Army of the Enemy both *Engliſh* and *Scotch* lay, which by computation could be little leſſe then 24000 fighting men; a forlorne was commanded out by Major *Smith-*

Smithſon, conſiſting of 500 foote, 200 Horſe, and two Troops of Dragoones, who charg'd furiouſly upon the Enemy, purſuing them from lanes and Villages with great reſolution, which ſo allarm'd the whole Army, and cauſ'd them to draw up upon a More, two miles Eaſt of *Preſton*; our forelorne notwithſtanding the deepneſſe of the wayes, behaved themſelves with much Gallantry, who after they had cleared the lanes, our foote drew up; the Van conſiſted of Colonell *Bright*, The Lord Generall, and the *Lancaſhire* Regiments; The Reare of Colonell *Overtons*, *Deane*, and *Prides* Regiments; The Battle of a ſuddaine was very hot, and there was a fierce diſpute for two houres; the enemy having lined the hedges, did much miſchiefe both to Horſe and foote, but by the Courage of our men, they quickly clear'd the Hedges, and forc't them to retire: The enemy ſtill gave ground, and we ſtill purſuing from hedge to hedge; our Horſe purſue them through *Preſton* Towne: the enemies Army divides and retreats two ſeverall wayes.

A body of 3000 Horſe move toward *Lancaſter*, the reſt of their Horſe and foote retreat over the river *Ribble*; our men follow, and purſue them ſeverall wayes; Colonell *Twiſſleton* and Colonell *Thornelow* purſue them Northward, overtook, Rout, ſcatter, and took multitudes priſoners.

But the maine of our Army followed that part that went Southward, there was a very hot dispute over *Ribble* bridge, which they Gallantly defended for two houres, at length a body of our Pikes runs furiously upon their Muskets, and forced them to retire; we kild and took many of them, but night approaching hinderd the pursuit.

The next morning the Enemies whole body was drawne up upon a hill on the side of *Preston*, our men fall on with courage, and forced them to retire in disorder; we kild and took many, and that night they fled to *Wiggon*, which they plunderd.

The next morning the Enemy came within two miles of *Warington*, where they drew up in a very strong field, which had high banks like fortifications; where *Oswold* King of the *Northumbers* was formerly slaine.

We fell upon them, though with very great disadvantage, our Horse Charge Resolutely; The dispute was long and sharp, untill such time as the foote could come up to engage, which no sooner came but they retire, and we pursued them to *Warington* bridge; there was kild of the Enemy above a thousand, and above two thousand taken prisoners, the rest fled over *Warington* bridge, where the foote were left by the Horse, who fled; upon our advance they sent a parly,

and

and above 4000 well accoutred men with the Lieutenant Generall laid downe their Armes, and ſubmitted to mercy.

Thoſe that went with Duke *Hamilton*, move up and downe in *Cheſhire*, the Country people in Armes on their own defence, ſeaze on diverſe ſtraglers, many expecting no good, leave him, at laſt he moves toward *Staffordſhire*.

Severall parties of Horſe were ſent after them, one meets with *Middleton*, who commanded 400 Horſe, falls on him, diſperſt his company, and took him priſoner.

Sir *Marmaduke Langdale* is apprehended in an Inne.

The Duke ſent to the Lord *Gray* for a Ceſſation, and to render himſelfe priſoner to him, which accordingly he did; Immediately Commiſſioners are appointed by the Parliament to examine him.

Colonell *George Monroe* being newly come into *England* with a conſiderable body for a reſerve, underſtanding the totall defeat of *Hamilton*, returnes back into *Scotland*: and not long after came the Marqueſſe of *Argile*, Lord *Louden*, *Leaven*, and other of the Nobility to Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell*, to manifeſt their utter diſlike of *Hamiltons* coming with an Army, and *Monroes* endeavours to Levy Forces for the proſecution of the War, and to deſire his aſſiſtance

ſtance againſt him : To which the Lieutenant Generall return'd anſwer of his willingneſſe to aſſiſt them, and to joyne with them to ſubdue *Monro*, and that he did really believe, that God gave the Dukes Army into the hands of thoſe under his Command, to make way for the relieſe of the faithfull in *Scotland*; he forthwith communicates it to the Houſe, who accordingly Vote that they approve of his Entring *Scotland*, for the aſſiſtance of thoſe that endeavour'd to oppoſe *Hamiltons* Levies.

The Parliament Orders ſo many of the *Scots* priſoners, being in all 15000 that were forc't away, be ſent home in regard of the dearneſſe of proviſſions; The reſt to be ſent to ſeverall parts abroad.

The King from *Careſbrooke*, Auguſt 28 1648. ſent a Letter to the Speakers of both Houſes; thus;

My Lord, and Mr Speaker, I have receiv'd your Letter of the 25 of this moneth, with the Votes that you ſent me, and though they are not ſo full as I could have wiſht to the perfecting of a Treaty, yet becauſe I conceive by what you have done, that I am in ſome meaſure fit to begin on (ſuch is my unceſſant and earneſt deſire to give a peace to theſe my

now

now distressed Kingdomes, as I now accept the Treaty) & therefore desire that such five Lords and ten Commons, as my two Houses shall appoint, be speedily sent, fully Authorized and Instructed to treat with me, not doubting but what is now wanting, will at our meeting upon debate be fully supplied, not onely to the furtherance of this Treaty, but also to the Consummating of a safe and well-grounded peace.

So I rest your good Friend,

Charles R.

Indorsed

For the Earle of *Manchester*, Speaker of the House of Peeres *pro tempore*, and *William Lenthall*.

He likewise Inclosed the Names of those persons which he desir'd might attend him, most whereof were Granted him.

The Towne of *Colchester* having held out the longest siege of any Towne in *England* since the first beginning of the troubles, in Expectation of Relieſe from the North; but the *Scots* Colours being brought before the Towne, totally disappointed

pointed them of their Expectation, and being by famine the soreſt of Calamities, compeld to deliver the Towne up to mercy (they having fed neere ten dayes together on Horſ-fleſh) The Great ones endeavouring to eſcape were turn'd back by their own men. The Towne was deliver'd up on theſe Conditions:

The Generall permitting the Common Souldiers to depart with life, and the Officers to remaine at his diſpoſall, he to exempt from mercy whom he pleaſed, the remainder to be remitted to the mercy of the Parliament.

The Towne to Rayſe 14000 *l.* to preſerve it from plunder.

And accordingly *Auguſt* 27. they marcht out on the Conditions above expreſt.

The miſeries of the Towne were great, there being hardly ſo much as Horſ-bread left to have preſerv'd them alive one day.

On the 28 of *Auguſt* at a Councell of War, it was reſolv'd that Sir *Charles Lucas*, Sir *George Liſle*, and Sir *Barnard Jaſkin*, a Papiſt, be ſhot to death.

And accordingly Sir *Charles Lucas* was brought out into the Caſtle yard, where he inſiſted upon an appeale, but being deni'd, he took Courage, and looking death in the face with an undaunted reſolution, ſubmitted himſelfe.

Sir *George Liſle* was next brought forth, who kiſt

kiſt Sir *Charles* being dead, and after private prayer deſir'd a ſpeedy death, more deſperate then many of the ancient *Romanes* on Record.

Its Credibly Reported by Eye-witneſſes, that upon the very place where they were executed, there groweth no graſſe, notwithſtanding all the ground thereabout is very fertill.

Sir *Barnard Jaſkin* was reprieved.

The Generall ſent immediately a Letter to the Commons, giving them an account of the whole proceedings as to *Colcheſter*; as likewiſe certified the names of thoſe Officers priſoners, which were neere two hundred, and to know their pleaſure; withall Telling them that to ſatisfie the Souldiery, and to take vengeance, he had cauſed to be ſhot to death Sir *Charles Lucas*, and Sir *George Liſle*; The firſt having contrary to promiſe falſified his word with him; the ſecond, directed the ſhooting of poyſoned bullets, both being againſt the Law of Armes.

Auguſt the 31. the Commons took into Conſideration the Kings Letter, and thoſe perſons that he had nominated; And by reaſon that ſome of them were exempted perſons, others priſoners, or under bail, they were not all allowed.

The reſt that his Majeſty had nam'd had freedome to goe.

The next day the Lords and Commons nominated their Commiſſioners to treat with his Ma-

jeſty, *viz.* The Earle of *Northumberland*, the Earle of *Pembrooke*, Lord of *Salſbury*, Lord of *Middleſex*, Lord *Say* and *Seale*: for the Commons, Mr *Hollis*, the Lord *Wainman*, Mr *Perepoint*, Sir *Harbottle Grimſtone*, Sir *Henry Vane*, Junior, Sir *John Corbet*, Mr *Crew*, Mr *Samuel Browne*, Mr *Glin*, and Mr *Bulkley*.

The Commons order a Letter to be ſent to his Majeſty, with the names of the Commiſſioners, withall letting him know how far they had proceeded in the Treaty.

They further conſidered of Inſtructions for the Treaty, and require money of the City to defray the Charge.

The Prince Riding in the Downs with the Revolted ſhips, ſent a ſummons to the Earle of *Warwick*, to tender and ſubmit himſelfe to the Kings Majeſty, for the better ſecurity and ſettlement of the Kingdome. The Lord Admirall returnes anſwer, that God-willing he will performe the truſt repoſed in him; and for ſetling the Kingdome, he leaves that to the Parliament.

September 11. a Petition was preſented to the Commons, entituled, *The humble Petition of thouſands well affected in the City of London*, giving diverſe Reaſons why they aſſiſted them in the war with their lives and fortunes, giving them to underſtand that they expected other meanes for a ſettlement, then a perſonall Treaty; as likewiſe taking

taking particular notice of the ſeverall wants and neceſſities of the Nation, concluding that they had laid to heart the blood and loſſe of the people, and wiſht them ſeriouſly to conſider, whether an act of oblivion will ſatisfie Gods Juſtice, and appeaſe his wrath.

Which Petition was laid aſide.

Money being provided, on the 14 of *September* the Commiſſioners ſet forward for the *Iſle of Wight*, forty dayes was the time limited; his Majeſty deſir'd that the firſt day, on which nothing was performed but viſits, might not be reckoned for one of the forty.

The next day the Perſonall Treaty began, and it may very well be call'd *Perſonall*, for was it ever knowne that a King of *England* argued and diſputed alone with able men ſelected out of the Parliament, they perſonally to argue *pro* and *con* with a King.

His Majeſty being ſeated in a Chair of State, thoſe his aſſiſtants by him were ſilent.

His Majeſty deſir'd a Copy of the Heads that they came to treat upon, the Commiſſioners anſwered, they were the ſame with thoſe at *Hampton Court*.

His Majeſty replyed, ſome of thoſe Heads concern'd *Scotland*; the Commiſſioners ſaid they came to treat onely of thoſe that concern'd *England* and *Ireland*.

jeſty, *viz.* The Earle of *Northumberland*, the Earle of *Pembrooke*, Lord of *Salſbury*, Lord of *Middleſex*, Lord *Say* and *Seale*: for the Commons, Mr *Hollis*, the Lord *Wainman*, Mr *Perepoint*, Sir *Harbottle Grimſtone*, Sir *Henry Vane*, Junior, Sir *John Corbet*, Mr *Crew*, Mr *Samuel Browne*, Mr *Glin*, and Mr *Bulkley*.

The Commons order a Letter to be ſent to his Majeſty, with the names of the Commiſſioners, withall letting him know how far they had proceeded in the Treaty.

They further conſidered of Inſtructions for the Treaty, and require money of the City to defray the Charge.

The Prince Riding in the Downs with the Revolted ſhips, ſent a ſummons to the Earle of *Warwick*, to tender and ſubmit himſelfe to the Kings Majeſty, for the better ſecurity and ſettlement of the Kingdome. The Lord Admirall returnes anſwer, that God-willing he will performe the truſt repoſed in him; and for ſetling the Kingdome, he leaves that to the Parliament.

September 11. a Petition was preſented to the Commons, entituled, *The humble Petition of thouſands well affected in the City of London*, giving diverſe Reaſons why they aſſiſted them in the war with their lives and fortunes, giving them to underſtand that they expected other meanes for a ſettlement, then a perſonall Treaty; as likewiſe taking

taking particular notice of the ſeverall wants and neceſſities of the Nation, concluding that they had laid to heart the blood and loſſe of the people, and wiſht them ſeriouſly to conſider, whether an act of oblivion will ſatisfie Gods Juſtice, and appeaſe his wrath.

Which Petition was laid aſide.

Money being provided, on the 14 of *September* the Commiſſioners ſet forward for the *Iſle of Wight*, forty dayes was the time limited; his Majeſty deſir'd that the firſt day, on which nothing was performed but viſits, might not be reckoned for one of the forty.

The next day the Perſonall Treaty began, and it may very well be call'd *Perſonall*, for was it ever knowne that a King of *England* argued and diſputed alone with able men ſelected out of the Parliament, they perſonally to argue *pro* and *con* with a King.

His Majeſty being ſeated in a Chair of State, thoſe his aſſiſtants by him were ſilent.

His Majeſty deſir'd a Copy of the Heads that they came to treat upon, the Commiſſioners anſwered, they were the ſame with thoſe at *Hampton Court*.

His Majeſty replyed, ſome of thoſe Heads concern'd *Scotland*; the Commiſſioners ſaid they came to treat onely of thoſe that concern'd *England* and *Ireland*.

The King deſir'd the *Scots* might be Included; to which the Commiſſioners anſwered, they had no Inſtructions to permit it; his Majeſty further deſired that what papers he might put in during the Treaty, might be no way obliging till ſuch time as all was agreed.

The Commiſſioners Inſiſted on the firſt Article, which was, *that his Majeſty ſhould recall all his Declarations*; to which he brought many preſſing arguments, profeſſing he was in a very great ſtraight, to yeild would leave a blot and ſtaine upon himſelfe and thoſe that aſſiſted him, and to breake off the Treaty upon that, would be very prejudiciall to him, and the whole Kingdome, deſiring ſome expedient might be found out. The next day the Commiſſioners gave weighty reaſons to his Majeſty, which mov'd him to ſigne it with this proviſo, that if the whole was not concluded, this conceſſion of his ſhould not be taken advantage of.

The ſecond Propoſition wholly related to the ſettlement of the Church, which being very long took ſome time; In it he ſcrupled at two things, firſt at his own taking the Covenant; a ſecond againſt pluralities, much wondring that this ſhould be put on him, when the Parliament had granted more pluralities to ſome men, then ever he did to any: after much ſerious conſideration, the King gave in a Paper, wherein he agreed; Firſt, to ſettle the

the Directory; ſecondly, to paſſe an Act to confirme the Aſſembly; thirdly, that *Preſbyterian* Government be ſetled for three yeares, in the Interim, a conſultation be had what Government ſhall be ſetled at the expiration of the three yeares, provided he and his party may have Liberty to uſe the old forme; he liked not the ſale of Biſhops Lands for ninety nine years, and utterly refuſed to take the Covenant; Further, adding that when he came to *London* he ſhould be willing to paſſe any thing that his two Houſes ſhould adviſe to.

As to the Propoſition for taking away all Honours ſince 1642. his Majeſty is conſenting that all perſons on whom Honours have been confer'd ſince *May* 21. 1642. ſhall be uncapable of ſitting in the Houſe without the conſent of both Houſes of Parliament.

Concerning Delinquents his Majeſty conſents that all perſons that have had any hand in the plotting contrary deſignes, or aſſiſting the Rebellion of *Ireland*, ſhall expect no pardon.

For Delinquents his Majeſty deſires they may compound moderately for their Eſtates; and further, for the quiet and ſettlement of the Kingdome, his Majeſty is willing that all thoſe Delinquents whom the Parliament ſhall not thinke fit, be not admitted to Councell or Court without the conſent of both Houſes.

The Commiſſioners being bound up to receive a poſitive anſwer, durſt not accept of that.

Diverſe meetings and arguings were on both ſides, for and againſt; at laſt on the 21 of *October*, the King put in a Paper containing the Heads of thoſe things that he requir'd, which were:

1. That he be put in a condition of freedome, Honour and ſafety, and have the faith of the two Houſes therefore.

2. That he may be reſtored to his Lands and Revenues.

3. That he may have compenſation for the Court of *Wards*, and ſuch other of his revenue as he ſhall part withall.

4. An Act of Oblivion and Indempnity be paſt.

Which Propoſitions the Commiſſioners communicate to the Lords, who upon debate finde them to be ſo reaſonable, as to conſent to them all; They likewiſe Informe the Houſe of his Majeſties anſwer to Religion, and the Covenant, which the Houſe Vote not ſatisfactory, and will by no meanes promiſe him the uſe of the Common prayer, but for the Covenant they are content to ſuſpend it, but order the Commiſſioners to proceed on the reſt.

The Lords Vote that they approve of his Majeſties ſuſpenſion of Epiſcopacy for three yeares, provided it take no place afterward but by conſent of Parliament.

The

The Lords and Commons Vote their Commiſſioners returne from the Treaty, excepting the Earle of *Northumberland*, Mr *Perepoint*, and Mr *Hollis*.

The Commons debated of his Majeſties Propoſitions, and Vote that they agree.

1. That he be in Honour, freedome and ſafety, according to the Laws.

2. That he have his revenue as before, excepting the Dedications of ſuch Forts and Garriſons, as were of old accuſtom'd to be allow'd maintenance.

3. That he have compenſation for the Court of *Wards*.

4. That an Act of Oblivion be paſt.

All which they communicate to the Lords.

The King having Granted the Parliament to diſpoſe of all Great Offices for ten yeares, they Vote it ſatisfactory.

Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell* enters *Scotland*, and puts out ſtrict Proclamation for the Civill deportment of his Army; He no ſooner enters the Kingdome, but *Monroe* and others diſpairing of ſucceſſe, disband the new Livies, and returne malancholly to *Edenborough*.

The Lieutenant Generall was with many of the Officers of the Army Nobly feaſted by the Nobility and Gentry of that Nation at *Edenborough*.

The

The *Scots* ſend Commiſſioners to *London*, to the Parliament, to ſhew their Juſt diſlike of the late Levies.

On the 9th of *October*, he had *Carlile* deliver'd up to him, who immediately appointed Sir *Arthur Haſlerig* to be Governour.

Endeavours were made for the betraying of *Pendennis* Caſtle, but it was timely prevented.

Lanerick the Governour of *Barwick* ſent, deſiring Conditions for the delivering of the Town, which was accordingly conſented to.

The Lieutenant Generall with the Army returne out of *Scotland*, not without much thanks from the Generality of the Nobility.

The Committee of *York* Petition the Lieutenant Generall to take care of the ſiege of *Pomfret*, who accordingly ſent a ſharp ſummons to the Governour, to which the Governour ſent a Reply, which in effect was a deniall.

Major Generall *Skippon* Reports to the Houſe the great danger they were in, by reaſon of the great concourſe of Malignants and diſaffected perſons into the City, together with the plots tending to aſſiaſſinate many of the Members, and of his Inability to aſſiſt them without a Guard, requiring if they thinke it convenient, that ſome of the Army come to Guard them, upon which the Houſe appointed a time to conſider of it.

The Complaint of the Country every where was

was very Great, by reaſon of free quarter, which the Officers of the Army upon ſerious Inſpection, diſcover a deſigne to ſtop their pay, to make them more odious to the people.

At a Councell of War held at the *Bull* in St *Albanes*, where were preſent ſixteen Colonels, beſides other Officers, a Declaration was read of all their Grivances, and deſires, containing 26 ſheets of Paper, which was orderd to be preſented to the Houſe *Nemine contradicente.*

The Commons order the drawing of ſeverall Acts to be ſign'd by his Majeſty.

As, 1. An Act for Juſtifying the War made by Parliament.

2. An Act for Nulling all Honours, ſince the carrying away of the Great Seale.

3. An Act for explanation, and preventing future Interpretations of the Statute 25 *Ed.* the 3^d, and all other Acts of Treaſon, and that of the 11 of *Henry* the 7th, concerning the ſubjects aiding the King in his Wars, for the better ſecuring the Kingdomes peace, and ſubjects lives and eſtates, which being ſent to the Commiſſioners, together with the Votes of the Houſe concerning the Biſhops and their Lands, and by them preſented to his Majeſty, who ſeemed very much diſſatisfied. The Commiſſioners againe preſs upon the King, to which he replies, that he had given his anſwer already, and could not with a ſafe conſcience conſent

ſent to the aboliſhing of Biſhops, nor approve of the alienating of their Lands, becauſe he is perſwaded the firſt is Apoſtolicall, the ſecond ſacrilegious. He further tould them, that if his two Houſes will not recede from their former Votes, and content themſelves ſatisfied in order to peace, He can be content *with Chriſt to ſuffer any thing that can befall him, rather then deprive himſelfe of the tranquility of Conſcience*, ſtill hoping that the Parliament will conſent.

To which the Commiſſioners anſwer that the Parliament conceive it neceſſary that his Majeſty grant their requeſt for the peace and welfare of the Kingdom, aſſuring that it is not the Apoſtolicall Biſhop which they require, but the Biſhop eſtabliſht by Law, growne up to that height of pride and ſtate, Inſulting over all power, and burthenſome to the perſons and eſtates of the ſubjects.

And for alienating Biſhops Lands, they anſwer, they were ſettled by Law, and by Law may be alienated, and that it was an ordinary practice of his Majeſties Predeceſſors in the Caſe of Abby Lands.

On the 26 of *November*, was preſented a Declaration of the Army to the Commons Houſe, which was the day before ſubſcribed by the Generall, it contained 26 ſheets of paper, ſhewing *the miſgoings of King & Parliament ſeverally, alſo*

in

in all Treaties betwixt them, especially that they are now in: They conceive the Parliament hath abundant cause to lay aside any further proceedings in this Treaty, and to returne to their Votes of non-addresses, and settle with or against the King, that he may Governe no more, by rejecting those demands of the King, especially concerning his restitution, and coming to London *with freedome, Honour and safety, and that they proceed against the King in way of Justice, and that a peremptory day be set for the Prince of* Wales, *and Duke of* York *to come in, if not to be declared uncapable of any Government, and stand Exiled for ever as traytors.*

The Governour of the *Isle of Wight* sends a Letter to the Lords, that he may be discharged of his Imployment, which they would by no meanes consent to, but orderd him to continue his Imployment.

The Generall Orders Collonell *Evers* Governour of the Island, and sent for Colonell *Hamond* to the head quarters at *Windsor*; whither being come, He was for some time detained.

The Generall sent a Letter to both Houses, of the Grounds and reasons of his advance with his Army toward the City, in pursuance of their former Declaration.

And on the second of *December*, accordingly the Generall and Army enters the Lines of Communication; The Generall quarterd at *White Hall*,

Hall, with a Regiment of foote, the Horſe and the reſt of the Army quarter in the *Mews*, St *James's*, *York* Houſe, and diverſe other places about the City.

The King from *Newport* was by the new Governour convey'd to *Hurſt* Caſtle, a very noyſome and unwholſome place, where during his reſtraint he compoſed his book, entituled, *The portraiture of his ſacred Majeſty in his ſolitude and ſufferings*, a Royall Monument which he left to poſterity.

The Houſe ſat all day and night till eight of the Clock next morning; many Speeches were made by diverſe Members of the Kings Conceſſions, among the reſt Mr *Prin* made a long Speech, proving the Kings Conceſſions to be a Ground for a ſetled peace, which was afterwards Voted in the Houſe, 129 being for it, and 84 againſt it.

Wedneſday *December* the ſixt, ſome part of the Army having a Liſt of thoſe Members that were to be taken into cuſtody, accordingly they did it, not permitting them to enter the Houſe, the number ſeazed was thirty-four, two whereof, *viz.* Sir *Benjamine Ruddier* and Mr *Nathaniel Fines*, were by the Generall diſcharged, the reſt were carried to the *Kings head* in the *Strand*, and diverſe other places of *Weſtminſter*, having Guards upon them.

Preſently

Preſently after was publiſht the Reaſons why the Army had ſecluded divers Members which were; Firſt, *That very many had turn'd Malignants, and had brought ſuch into the Houſe, and kept them in, notwithſtanding Votes to the contrary*; ſecondly, *They endeavouring to bring the King in upon his own tearmes*; thirdly, *Their protecting the* 11 *Members from Juſtice*; fourthly, *Their abetting and pertaking with the Cities violence on the Houſe, and tumults*; fifthly, *Encouraging the City and others to Petition for a perſonall Treaty*; ſixthly, *Encouraging the late Inſurrections, and calling in the* 11 *Members.*

The remaining Members continue ſitting; on the ſeventh of *December*, Lieutenant Generall *Cromwell* came to the Houſe, and had their thankes for his faithfull ſervice both in *England* and *Scotland.*

The ſame day the Lords Voted his Majeſties Conceſſions a Ground for peace, and forthwith adjourne.

Severall Regiments of Horſe and foote were quarterd in *Black Fryers*, St *Pauls* Church, and all the Houſes adjacent.

On the ninth of *December*, a Petition was preſented to the Councell of War at *White Hall*, by the Officers and Souldiers of diverſe Regiments, That the Grand and Capitall Enemies of the Common-wealth may be ſpeedily brought to Juſtice.

The

The Committee fitting in *White Hall*, order a Repreſentative of 400 perſons to be choſen throughout the Nation, for the ſettlement of the Kingdome.

December 13. the Remaining part of the Commons Houſe Nuld the Vote for his Majeſties Conceſſions, and order the Generall to take care of the King.

The Councell of War were orderd to ſit to draw up a Charge againſt the King, and accordingly orders were Iſſued out for his removall.

December the 10th, his Majeſty came from *Hurſt* Caſtle, dined at a Ladyes, and that night came on Horſ-back to *Wincheſter*, where he lay all night; The next night to *Fernham*, attended by Colonel *Hariſon*, and a Guard of 2000 Horſe; the next day he came to *Windſor*, and was deliver'd up to the Governour, who had Inſtructions not to permit him to be ſpoken with, nor viſited by any, but by ſpeciall order from Parliament or Generall.

Diverſe of the ſecluded Members were diſcharged by the Generall.

On the 23 of *December*, The Commons order a Charge to be drawne up againſt the Capitall offenders of the Kingdome, and amongſt the reſt the King was named.

December the 28. an Ordinance was brought into the Houſe Nominating diverſe perſons to

Try

Try the King, which being tenderd to the Lords was refuſed.

Major *Pitcher* an Active ſtout man for the King, having his life Granted on promiſe to goe out of the Land, was apprehended and ſhot to death in St *Pauls* Church-yard.

The Commons ſeeing the Lords averſe proceed themſelves, and agreed to the Commiſſion brought in for Triall of the King, and order the Commiſſioners to meete on Munday in the painted Chamber, to conſider of manner, time, and place.

January the 9th, the Lords Vote that the King could not commit Treaſon againſt the Commonwealth, and order a Declaration to be drawne up of the Grounds and reaſons of their rejecting the Commiſſion for triall of the King; and another, That no Act of the Commons is binding, without the conſent of the Lords.

The Queene ſent a Letter to both Houſes, craving leave to come over to viſit her husband, but it would not be Granted.

The Miniſters of *London* (though now too late) came to the Generall at *White Hall*, to declare their diſlike of the proceedings, which begat a High conteſt.

The Commons Adjourne part of *Hillary* Tearme in order to the Kings Triall.

Some Judges for diſſenting from the Kings Triall are diſplaced.

The Committee fitting in *White Hall*, order a Repreſentative of 400 perſons to be choſen throughout the Nation, for the ſettlement of the Kingdome.

December 13. the Remaining part of the Commons Houſe Nuld the Vote for his Majeſties Conceſſions, and order the Generall to take care of the King.

The Councell of War were orderd to ſit to draw up a Charge againſt the King, and accordingly orders were Iſſued out for his removall.

December the 10th, his Majeſty came from *Hurſt* Caſtle, dined at a Ladyes, and that night came on Horſ-back to *Wincheſter*, where he lay all night; The next night to *Fernham*, attended by Colonel *Hariſon*, and a Guard of 2000 Horſe; the next day he came to *Windſor*, and was deliver'd up to the Governour, who had Inſtructions not to permit him to be ſpoken with, nor viſited by any, but by ſpeciall order from Parliament or Generall.

Diverſe of the ſecluded Members were diſcharged by the Generall.

On the 23 of *December*, The Commons order a Charge to be drawne up againſt the Capitall offenders of the Kingdome, and amongſt the reſt the King was named.

December the 28. an Ordinance was brought into the Houſe Nominating diverſe perſons to

Try

Try the King, which being tenderd to the Lords was refuſed.

Major *Pitcher* an Active ſtout man for the King, having his life Granted on promiſe to goe out of the Land, was apprehended and ſhot to death in St *Pauls* Church-yard.

The Commons ſeeing the Lords averſe proceed themſelves, and agreed to the Commiſſion brought in for Triall of the King, and order the Commiſſioners to meete on Munday in the painted Chamber, to conſider of manner, time, and place.

January the 9th, the Lords Vote that the King could not commit Treaſon againſt the Commonwealth, and order a Declaration to be drawne up of the Grounds and reaſons of their rejecting the Commiſſion for triall of the King; and another, That no Act of the Commons is binding, without the conſent of the Lords.

The Queene ſent a Letter to both Houſes, craving leave to come over to viſit her husband, but it would not be Granted.

The Miniſters of *London* (though now too late) came to the Generall at *White Hall*, to declare their diſlike of the proceedings, which begat a High conteſt.

The Commons Adjourne part of *Hillary* Tearme in order to the Kings Triall.

Some Judges for diſſenting from the Kings Triall are diſplaced.

Jan. 17. The Commissioners for Triall of the King met in the painted Chamber, and debated whether they should have in Court the Mace and Sword, and accordingly it was Resolv'd to have both Mace and Sword; the Sword alone being too terrible.

The Commons upon the Kings request Order Dr *Juxson*, Bishop of *London*, to attend him as Chaplain.

Proclamation was made in *Westminster Hall*, and the *Old Exchange*, for witnesses to come in against the King.

Friday the 19 of *January*, the King was brought from *Windsor* Castle, and was met by a Regiment of Horse four miles from *London*, and that night lodg'd at St *James's*.

The *Kings Bench-Bar* and *Chancery* were appointed for the Commissioners to sit in, which were Rayled and Scaffolded; in the midst was placed a Crimson Velvet Chaire for the President, with a Desk before him, on which lay a Crimson Velvet Cushon; The Seates all Covered with Red; Beneath was a Table with a Turky Carpet for the Clarkes.

On saturday the 20 of *January*, the King was brought with a strong Guard of foote through St *James's* Parke to *White Hall*, and from thence was convay'd by water to Sir *Robert Cottons* House, with a Guard of twenty Partesons.

The

The Prefident Sargeant *Bradſhaw*, with his Traine held up, before whom was Carried the Sword by Collonell *Humphrys*, and the Mace by Sergeant *Dandy*; after whom came ſeventy Commiſſioners; the Councell was Mr *Aske*, a Lawyer of the Inner Temple, Dr *Daureſlaus* a Civilian, and Mr *Cooke* of *Grays* Inne was Solicitor Genenerall for the buſineſſe.

The Court being ſat, the Commiſſion by which they ſat was Read, together with the Commiſſioners names.

The Preſident commanded the Serjeant at Armes to fetch in the Priſoner, who immediately brought the King (attended by a Guard of Partezons) and placed him in a Chaire; He was no ſooner ſat, but with a ſterne Countenance he viewed the Court, Lookt up toward the Galleries, and riſing from his Chaire, turn'd himſelfe to behold the vaſt multitudes of Souldiers and others that were in the Hall.

It was further obſervable, that at his Majeſties firſt coming into the Court, the top of his ſtaff fell off, which none ſtooping for he took up himſelfe.

Silence being Commanded, the Lord Prefident told the King they were aſſembled by the Authority of the Commons of *England*, to proceed to the Triall of *Charles Stuart* King of *England*, who had betrayed the truſt repoſed in him by the

people, and Commanded the Charge to be read in Open Court, which was to this effect:

That the said Charles Stuart *being admitted King of* England, *and Intrusted with a Limited power to Governe according to the Laws, for the good and benefit of the people, and preserving their Rights and Liberties, yet nevertheless, out of a wicked designe to uphold himselfe by a Tyrannicall power according to his will, thereby to overthrow the Rights and Liberties of the people, yea thereby to make voyd the foundation thereof; he the said* Charles Stuart *for accomplishing such wicked designes, and for the protecting himselfe and his adherents in his and their wicked practices, hath traiterously and maliciously Levied war against the present Parliament, and the people therein represented.*

Particularly upon or about the 13 *day of* June 1642 *at* Beverly *in the County of* York, *and at or upon the* 13 *day of* July *in the yeare aforesaid in the County and City of* York, *and upon the* 24 *of* August *in the same yeare at the County of the Towne of* Nottingham *(when and where he set up his Standard of War) and on or about the* 23 *of* October *in the same yeare at* Edg-hill *and* Keinton field, *and upon or about the* 13 *day of* November *in the same yeare at* Branford *in the County of* Middlesex; *and at or upon the* 13 *of* August 1643 *at* Cave-

Caveſham bridge *neare* Reading *in the County of* Berks; *and at or upon the* 13 *of* October *in the ſame yeare at or neare the City of* Gloceſter; *and at or upon the* 30 *of* November *in the yeare laſt mentioned at* Newbery *in the County of* Berks, *and at* Crepida bridge *the* 13 *of* July 1644, *and the third of* September *in the ſame yeare at* Bodmin *and other places, neere adjacent in* Cornwall; *and on the* 30 *day of* November *in the yeare laſt mentioned at* Newbery *aforeſaid; and on the* 8 *of* June 1645 *at the Towne of* Leiceſter, *and alſo on the* 14th *day of the ſame moneth in the ſame yeare at* Naſeby field; *at which ſeverall times and places, or moſt of them, and at many other places in the Land, at ſeverall other times, within the yeares aforementioned, as alſo in the yeare* 1646 *He the ſaid* Charles Stuart *hath cauſed many thouſands of the people of the Nation to be ſlaine, & by diviſions, partyes, and Inſurrections in the Land, & by Invaſions from forraine parts, endeavoured and procur'd by him, and by many other evill wayes and meanes, He the ſaid* Charles Stuart *hath not onely maintain'd and carried on the ſaid war by Land and Sea, during the yeares aforementioned, but hath alſo revived, or cauſ'd to be revived, the ſaid war againſt the Parliament, and the good people of the Nation this preſent yeare* 1648, *in the Counties of* Kent, Eſſex, Surry, Suſſex, *and* Middleſex, *and in many other Counties in* England *and* Wales, *and alſo by Sea.*

And particularly He the said Charles Stuart *hath given Commissions to his Son the Prince for that purpose.*

By which cruel and unnaturall war by him the said Charles Stuart *Levied, continued and renued, as aforesaid, much Innocent blood hath been spilt, many families have been undone; The publique Treasury wasted and exhausted; Trade obstructed and decayed, Vast expence and damage to the Nation incur'd, and many parts of the Land spoyled, some even to desolation.*

And for further prosecution of the said evill designes, He the said Charles Stuart, *doth still continue his Commissions to the said Prince and other Rebells and Revolters.*

All which wicked designes, Wars and evill practices of him the said Charles Stuart, *have been and are carried on for the Advancing and Upholding of the Personall Interest of* Will *and* Power, *and pretended Prerogatives to himselfe against the Publique Interest, Right Justice, and peace of the Nation, by and for whom he was Intrusted as aforesaid.*

By all which it appeareth, that He the said Charles Stuart *hath been and is the occasioner, Author, and contriver of the said Unnatural War, and thereby Guilty of all the Treasons, Murthers, Rapines, burnings, spoyles, desolations, damage, and mischiefe to this Nation, acted and committed*

in

in the ſaid Wars, or occaſion'd thereby.

And the ſaid John Cook, *doth for the ſaid Treaſons and Crimes on the behalfe of the people of* England, *Impeach the ſaid* Charles Stuart, *as a Tyrant, Traytor, Murtherer, and a Publique and Implacable Enemy to the Common wealth of* England. *And therefore prayeth that the ſaid* Charles Stuart, *King of* England, *may be put to anſwer all and every the premiſes, that ſuch Proceedings, Examinations, Tryalls, Sentences, and Judgements, may be hereupon had, as may be agreeable to Juſtice.*

The Lord Preſident Replyed, Sir you have now heard your Charge Read, and in the Cloſe it is prayed in behalfe of the Commons of *England*, that you anſwer to your Charge; The Court Expects your Anſwer.

The King, I would know by what Power I was cald hither; I was not long agoe in the *Iſle of Wight*, how I came thither is too long to relate, or then I thinke now to ſpeak of; there I was in treaty with both Houſes of Parliament, with as much publique faith as its poſſible, we were almoſt come to the Concluſion of a Treaty; I would now know by what Authority, *I meane lawfull*, for there are many unlawfull Authorities in the world, *theeves and robbers by the high way*; but I would know by what Lawfull Authority I was brought from thence, and carried

from place to place, and when I know by what Lawfull Authority, I ſhall anſwer: Remember, I am your King, and what ſins you bring upon your heads, and what Judgements upon this Land, thinke well upon it; I ſay, thinke well upon it, before you goe from one ſin to a greater; Therefore let me know by what Lawfull Authority I am ſeated here; In the meane time I ſhall not betray my truſt, I have a truſt committed to me by God, by old and Lawfull deſcent, I will not betray it, by anſwering to a new and Unlawfull Authority.

Lord Preſident, If you had been pleaſed to have obſerv'd what had been hinted to you by the Court at your firſt coming hither, you would have knowne by what Authority. Which Authority requires you in the name of the people of *England*, by which you are Elected King, to anſwer them.

The King, No Sir, I deny that.

Lord Preſident, If you acknowledge not the Authority of the Court, they muſt proceed.

The King, I doe tell them ſo, *England* is an hereditary and not an Elective Kingdome, and hath been ſo neare 1000 yeares; therefore let me know by what Authority I am cald hither; I ſtand more for the priviledge of my people, than any that are ſeated here; ſtill urging to know by what Authority he was ſeated there, and he would

would anſwer; otherwiſe not.

Preſident, Charges the King with Interrogating the Court, which did not beſeeme him in that condition.

The King tould him, he was brought from the *Iſle of Wight* by force, and he did not come there as ſubmitting to the Court, profeſſing to ſtand for the priviledge of the Houſe of Commons, ſtill urging a Legall Authority, warranted by the Word of God, or the Conſtitution of the Kingdome, and he would Anſwer.

Preſident, Seeing you will not anſwer, the Court will conſider how to proceed; in the meane time, you are to be carried away by them that brought you hither.

The Court deſires to know whether this is all you will anſwer.

The King, I deſire you would Give me and all the world ſatisfaction in this, its no ſleight thing you are about, I am ſworne to God for the peace of my Country, and therefore you would doe well to ſatisfie God, and then the world by what Authority you doe this, there is a God in Heaven that will call you and all that Gives you power to account.

Preſident, The Court expects your finall anſwer; you deſire ſatisfaction of their Authority, it is upon Gods Authority, and that's our preſent Work.

The

The King, That which you have ſaid, ſatisfies no reaſonable man.

Preſident, That's in your apprehenſion, we thinke it reaſonable that are your Judges.

The King, Neither your apprehenſion nor mine ought to decide it.

Preſident, Commands the King to be taken away.

And accordingly he was convey'd back to St *James's*.

Two dayes after on the 22 of *January*, the Court meet in the painted Chamber; where they order that the *King ſhall not be ſuffered to argue the Juriſdiction of the Court, and that in caſe the King ſhould againe diſpute their Authority, the Preſident is to let him know, that the Court hath conſider'd his demands the laſt day, and that he ought to reſt ſatisfied with this anſwer, That the Commons of* England *aſſembled in Parliament have conſtituted this Court, whoſe power may not, nor ſhall not be diſputed againſt by him*.

Further, *That in caſe the King ſhall not anſwer, the Preſident is to let him know, that the Court doth take it as a contumacy, and record it, and in caſe he anſwer with a ſaving notwithſtanding of his pretended Prerogative above the Juriſdiction of the Court, the Preſident to refuſe his proteſt, and require his poſitive anſwer whether he will own the Court or not.*

And

And in case the King shall continue in his con-
tempt, The President shall command the Clarke to
demand of the King thus; Charles Stuart, *King of*
England, *you are accus'd in behalfe of the people of*
England, *of divers high Crimes and Treasons,*
which Charge hath been Read to you; *The Court*
requires you to give your positive answer, either to
confesse or deny.

And forthwith the Court assembles in *West-minster Hall*, where after their Names are cald over, the Captaine of the Guard is commanded to fetch the King, who being brought and seated, as before, a Great shout was made by the people; Soliciter *Cooke* againe accuseth the King as before, the Charge being Read, he required he might give a positive answer, which if he refuse, the Charge to be taken *pro Confesso*, and the Court proceed to Justice.

President, Requires the King to give a positive answer, and either confesse or deny, it is offerd in behalfe of the Kingdome to be made good against you, for the Authority of the Court they avow it, and the whole Kingdome are to rest satisfied with it, I therefore require your positive answer.

The King persisted in his former protest against the Jurisdiction of the Court, and that a King could not be tryed by any superior Jurisdiction on Earth, and could them that pretend what

what they would he ſtood for their Liberties; for if *Power without Law* may alter the fundamentall Laws of the Kingdome, what ſubject is he that can be ſecure of his Life or Eſtate; and going to ſhew reaſons why he could not allow them a Court, he was Interrupted by the *Preſident*, who tould him they would not allow him to diſpute the Authority of the Court, deſiring a punctuall and direct anſwer.

The King, I underſtand Law and reaſon, and therefore under favour I doe plead for the Liberty of the people more then you doe, and therefore if I ſhould Impoſe a beliefe upon any man without reaſons given for it, it were unreaſonable. The *Preſident* againe Interrupted him, telling him he might not be permitted to ſpeake of Law and reaſon there; The Vote of the Commons of *England* aſſembled in Parliament are the reaſon of the Kingdome: Sir, you are not to diſpute our Authority, and it will be taken notice of that you ſtand in contempt of the Court, and your contempt will be recorded.

King, I doe not know how a King can be a Delinquent by any Law, I ever heard of, I demand to be heard my reaſons, if you deny that you deny reaſon.

Preſident, Sir, Neither you nor any man ſhall be permitted to diſpute the Authority of the Court; further telling him that if he demurr'd to

the

the Jurisdiction of the Court, they sitting there by the Authority of the Commons of *England*, he and all his Predecessors are responsible to them.

The King, I deny it.

President, You ought not to disturbe or Interrupt the Court in speaking; They have considerd of their own Jurisdiction.

King, I say, Sir, The Commons of *England* were never allow'd a Court of Judicature.

President, Sir, you are not to be permitted to goe on in these discourses.

Then the Clarke Read as was Orderd in the painted Chamber, requiring the King to answer; Upon which the King promised to answer, so soone as he knew the Authority of the Court.

President, If that be all you have to say, then take away the Prisoner; To which the King reply'd, I require to give in my Reasons, which the *President* would not permit; The King urges againe to give in his Reasons, but the *President* tould him his Reasons were not to be heard against the higheſt Jurisdiction. To which the King answered, shew me the Court where Reason is not to be heard.

The President againe commands the Prisoner to be taken away, who was accordingly convey'd back to St *James's*.

The President orderd to record the default.

On

On the 23 of *January*, 1648. The Court met againe according to the usuall manner, and the Prisoner was brought with his Guard, and seated in his Chaire; Soliciter *Cooke* made a formall Speech, addressing himselfe to the *President*, and in the Close craved Judgement to be pronounced against the Prisoner.

The *President* addresses himselfe to the King, and tells him, That it was not for him to dispute the Jurisdiction of the supreame and highest Authority of *England*, from whom there is no appeale; and further to let him know, that the Court was sensible of his delays, and that they ought not to be thus trifled with, and that they might in Justice take advantage of those delays, and proceed to Judgement against him; yet nevertheless, by direction of the Court, I require a positive answer whether you are Guilty or not Guilty of the Treasons laid to your Charge.

To which the *King* reply'd, when I was here last I did desire to speake for the Liberties of the people of *England*, but was Interrupted, I desire to know whether I may speake freely or not.

President, Sir, I must let you know from the Court, that you are not to be permitted to run out into any discourses, untill such time as you have given a positive answer to the matter that hath been Charg'd upon you.

The King, For the Charge I value it not a rush,

rush, its the Liberty of the people I stand for, I that am your King, and sworne to maintaine the Laws, for me to acknowledge a new Court that I never heard of; *here he was Interrupted.* Sir, you ought not to Interrupt me; How I came here I know not, there is no Law for it, to make your King your Prisoner.

President, Sir, you must know the pleasure of the Court.

The King, By your favour Sir.

President, Nay Sir, by your favour you may not be permitted to fall into these discourses; The Court once more demands your positive answer.

Here the Clarke Read the same as before.

To which the King replyed; To give satisfaction to the people of the Clearenesse of my proceedings, not by way of answer, but to satisfie them that I have done nothing against the trust that hath been committed to me, but to acknowledge a new Court against their priviledge, or to alter the fundamentall Laws of the Kingdome, you must excuse me.

President, Sir, This is the third time you have disownd the Court, and put an affront upon it; how far you have preserv'd the priviledge of the people your actions have spoke it; mens Intentions are knowne by their actions, you have written your meaning in bloody Characters; but Sir,

The

The pleasure of the Court is, that the Clarke Record your default, and you Gentlemen that take Charge of the Prisoner, take him away.

Who was Immediately convey'd back to St *James's* as accustom'd.

On the 27 of *January*, 1648.. The Court met againe in *Westminster Hall*, being in all seventy eight.

Whose Names were:

John Bradshaw, Sarjeant at Law, President.

Oliver Cromwell, Lieutenant Generall.

Commissary Generall *Ireton*.

Major Gen: *Skippon*.

Lords.

Thomas Lord *Gray* of *Groby*.

Philip Lord *Lisle*.

Colonells.

Edward Whaly.

Thomas Harrison.

Isaac Ewer.

Thomas Pride.

Rowland Wilson.

Richard Ingolsby.

William Purefoy.

Henry Martin.

Hewson.

Edward Ludlow.

Robert Titchburne.

John Huchinson.

Owen Row.

Adrian Scroope.

Robert Lilburne.

John Harrison.

Richard Deane.

John Okey.

John More.

William Goffe.

John Desborough.

Edmond Harvey.

Francis Lasseley.

John

John Venne.
John Downes.
Anthony Stapeley.
George Fleetwood.
James Temple.
Thomas Hamond.
Thomas Wait.
John Barkstead.
Godfry Boswell.
Mathew Tomlins.
Herbottle Morley.

Knights.

Sir Henry Mildmay.
Sir John Danvers.
Sir William Brereton.
Sir Miles Livesey.
Francis Thorpe, Sargeant.

Aldermen of London.

Isack Pennington.
Thomas Atkins.
John Fowkes.
Thomas Scott.
Thomas Andrews.

Esquires.

Gilbert Millington.
John Blackstone.
William Hemington.
Cornelius Holland.
Miles Corbet.
Francis Allin.
John Carme.
John Jones.
Peregrine Pelham.
John Gowden.
Thomas Chaloner.
John Aldred.
William Say.
Dennis Bond.
Henry Smith.
Gregory Clement.
Humphry Edwards.
Henry Smith.
James Chaloner.
John Fry.
Abraham Burrell.
William Cowley.
Nicholas Love.
John Liste.
Vincent Potter.
John Corbet.
Thomas Blunt.
Thomas Boone.
John Lawnes.
Augustine Caranell.
John Downe.
John Dexwell.

Silence being Commanded at the Kings coming into the Court, there was a great Cry made in the Hall for Execution, Execution.

The King desir'd to speake, and hopes he shall give no occasion of Interruption.

President, You may, but you must heare the Court first; the King presses to be heard before Judgement, to which the *President* promised he should.

Then the *President* began his Speech, addressing himselfe to the Court, how that the Prisoner at the Bar hath been severall times Charg'd with Treason in the name of the people of *England*, and requir'd to answer; That he hath been so far from obeying the Court by submitting to their Justice, that he began to offer reasoning and debate unto the Authority of the Court, and being requir'd to answer, he was pleased to be contumacious, and refused to answer; whereupon the Court have thought fit to take the matter into their consideration, and have considerd of the Notoriousnesse of the fact Charg'd upon the Prisoner, and upon the whole, are agreed and resolv'd, of a sentence to be pronounced on this Prisoner, but in respect he desires to be heard before sentence, the Court are resolv'd to heare him, provided he meddle not with the Jurisdiction of the Court, but if he have any thing to say in his own defence, the Court is willing to heare him.

The

The King tells them, a hasty sentence once past, may sooner be Repented then recald, desiring he might be heard in the Painted Chamber before the Lords and Commons. I cannot be Judge of that I have to say, but if it be reason, and really *for the welfare of the Kingdome, and Liberty of the subject*, I am sure it will be well worth the hearing before my sentence be past, therefore I doe conjure you, as you love that you pretend, I hope its reall, *the Liberty of the subject, and the peace of the Kingdome*, that you will grant me a hearing before you pass sentence; to which the *President* Reply'd, that it was a further declining of the Jurisdiction of the Court.

The King craving pardon for his Interruption, endeavour'd to cleer it, that it was not a declining of the Court, although he could not own it.

The President tould him they had with much patience waited his leasure as to an answer, and that what he had offerd tended to a delay, and such delayes neither the Kingdome nor Justice could admit of, but the Court is content to withdraw for a time, and you shall know their further pleasure.

The Sarjeant at Arms declares from the Court, that the Prisoner was to be withdrawne, untill such time as they should send for him.

After halfe an houres space, the Court being set, The *President* Commands the Sarjeant at Armes to send for the Prisoner, who being

brought, The *President* tould the King, that the Court had withdrawne *pro forma Tantum*, that they had considerd of what was offerd, and of their own Authority, which was founded by the supreame Authority of the Parliament of the Common-wealth of *England*, and that they had acted according to their Concession, but the returne that you are to expect from them is, that they have been too much delay'd by you already, and Judges are no more to delay then to deny, and notwithstanding what you have offerd, they are resolv'd to proceed to punishment and Judgement, and this is their unanimous resolution.

The King, Sir, It is in vaine for me to dispute, I know you have power enough, but it would have been for the Kingdomes peace, if you would have shewn the lawfulnesse of your power; it is not my own good I look at, but the Kingdomes peace, and welfare; I doe put at your doores all the Inconveniences of a hasty sentence, I confesse I have been here eight dayes, its but a little delay of a day or two more that may give the Kingdome peace, whereas a hasty Judgement may bring on that trouble and perpetuall Inconveniency to the Kingdome, that the child unborne may repent it, therefore once againe I desire to be heard by the Lords and Commons in the painted Chamber.

President. You have already received the Resolutions and Judgement of the Court in it, they desire

desire to know if you have any thing more to say before sentence.

The King, If you will grant me this delay, I doubt not but to give some reasonable satisfaction, therefore I require you as you will answer it at the dreadfull day of Judgement, that you will consider it.

To which the *President* replyed, If you have nothing more to say, we must proceed to sentence.

The King, I have nothing more to say.

President, The Court hath something to say to you, though it will not be acceptable to you, dilating upon the Charge, and the severall particulars whereof the Prisoner was Guilty, Illustrating his speech with divers examples sacred and prophane, that the people have deposed, nay executed their Kings for mis-government. In the Close of which the King desired to be heard (before sentence) concerning those Imputations Charg'd upon him. The *President* Replyed, that his time was now past, and he was not far from sentence. The King againe moves to be heard concerning those Imputations; but the *President* tould him that he not acknowledging them to be a Court, they could not admit of what he had to say; and further, Insisting upon his guilt, minding him what the Scripture saith, *For to acquit the Guilty is of equall abomination as to condemne the Innocent:* We may not acquit the Guilty, what sentence the Law denounceth to

a *Traytor*, a *Murtherer*, and a *Publique Enemy* to the *Country*, that ſentence you are now to have read unto you, and that is the ſenſe of the Court.

O yes, and ſilence Commanded, the *Preſident* appoints the Clark to read the ſentence, which was;

That whereas the Commons of England *in Parliament aſſembled, have appointed them a High Court of Juſtice for the trying of* Charles Stuart *King of* England, *before whom he had been three times Convented, and at the firſt time a Charge of High Treaſon and other Crimes and miſdemeanours was read in behalfe of the Kingdome of* England, *&c.* Reading the Charge. *To which Charge he the ſaid* Charles Stuart *refuſed ſeverall times to anſwer.*

For all which Treaſons and Crimes this Court doth adjudge that the ſaid Charles Stuart, *as a Tyrant, Traytor, Murtherer, and a publique Enemy, ſhall be put to death by ſevering his head from his body.*

The ſentence being read, the *Preſident* tould him, The ſentence read, and publiſhed, is the Act, Sentence, Judgement, and reſolution of the whole Court; Upon which the Court ſtood up, aſſenting to what the *Preſident* had ſaid.

The King would have been heard, but the *Preſident* tould him he was not to be heard after ſentence, and forthwith commanded the Priſoner to be carried away, who was convey'd to *White Hall*.

The Reaſons why he could not conſent to the Court, are as followeth, which he Intended to deliver on Munday *Jan.* 22. in writing, but was not permitted.

Having already made My proteſtations not only againſt the illegality of this pretended Court, but alſo that no Earthly power can juſtly call Me (who am your KING) in queſtion as a Delinquent; I would not any more open My mouth upon this occaſion, more than to refer My ſelf to what I have ſpoken, were I alone in this caſe alone concerned. But the duty I owe to God in the preſervation of the true liberty of My people, will not ſuffer Me at this time to be ſilent: For, how can any free-born Subject of *England* call Life, or any thing he poſſeſſeth, his own; if Power without Right daily make new, and abrogate the old fundamentall Law of the Land? which I now take to be the preſent caſe. Wherefore when I came hither, I expected that you would have endeavoured to have ſatisfied Me concerning theſe grounds which hinder Me to anſwer to your pretended Impeachment; but ſince I ſee that nothing I can ſay will move you to it (though Negatives are not ſo naturally proved as Affirmatives) yet I will ſhew you the Reaſon why I am confident you cannot judge Me, nor indeed the meaneſt Man in *England*; for, I will not (like you) without ſhewing a reaſon, ſeek to impoſe a belief upon My Subjects.

* *Hereabout I was ſtopt, & not ſuffered to ſpeak any more concerning Reaſons.*

* There is no proceeding juſt againſt any Man, but what is warranted either by Gods Laws, or the municipall Laws of the Country where he lives. Now I am moſt confident, that this dayes proceeding cannot be warranted by Gods Law, for on the contrary, the authority of obedience unto Kings is cleerly warranted and ſtrictly commanded both in the Old and New Teſtament; which if denied, I am ready inſtantly to prove: and for the Queſtion now in hand, there it is ſaid, That *where the word of a King is, there is power, and who may ſay unto him, what doeſt thou? Eccleſ.* 8. 4. Then for the Laws of this Land, I am no leſſe confident, that no learned Lawyer will affirm, that an impeachment can lye againſt the King, they all going in His Name; and one of their Maximes is, *That the King can do no wrong.* Beſides, the Law upon which you ground your proceedings, muſt either be old or new: if old, ſhew it; if new, tell what Authority warranted by the fundamentall Laws of the Land hath made it, and when. But how the Houſe of Commons can erect a Court of Judicature, which was never one it ſelf (as is well known to all Lawyers) I leave to God and the World to judge: And it were full as ſtrange that they ſhould pretend to make Laws without King or Lords-Houſe, to any that have heard ſpeak of the Laws of *England*.

And

And admitting, but not granting, that the people of *Englands* Commiſſion could grant your pretended power, I ſee nothing you can ſhew for that; for certainly you never asked the queſtion of the tenth man of the Kingdome, and in this way you manifeſtly wrong even the pooreſt ploughman, if you demand not his free conſent; nor can you pretend any colour for this your pretended Commiſſion without the conſent at leaſt of the major part of every man in *England*, of whatſoever quality or condition, which I am ſure you never went about to ſeek; ſo far are you from having it. Thus you ſee that I ſpeak not for My own right alone, as I am your KING, but alſo for the true liberty of all My Subjects, which conſiſts not in ſharing the power of Government, but in living under ſuch Lawes, ſuch a Government as may give themſelves the beſt aſſurance of their lives, and propriety of their goods. Nor in this muſt or do I forget the Priviledges of both Houſes of Parliament, which this dayes proceeding doth not only violate, but likewiſe occaſion the greateſt breach of their publick Faith, that (I believe) ever was heard of, with which I am far from charging the two Houſes: for all the pretended crimes laid againſt Me, bear date long before this late Treaty at *Newport*, in which I having concluded as much as in Me lay, & hopefully expecting the two Houſes agreement thereunto, I was ſuddenly ſurprized, and hurried from thence

as a Priſoner, upon which account I am againſt My will brought hither, where ſince I am come I cannot but to My power defend the ancient Laws and Liberties of this Kingdome, together with My own juſt right; Than for any thing I can ſee the higher Houſe is totally excluded. And for the Houſe of Commons, it is too well known that the major part of them are detained or deterred from ſitting, ſo as if I had no other, this were ſufficient for Me to proteſt againſt the lawfulneſſe of your pretended Court. Beſides all this, the peace of the Kingdome is not the leaſt in My thoughts, and what hopes of ſettlement is there ſo long as Power reigns without rule of Law, changing the whole frame of that Government under which this Kingdome hath flouriſhed for many hundred yeares, (nor will I ſay what will fall out in caſe this lawleſſe unjuſt proceeding againſt Me do go on) and believe it, the Commons of *England* will not thank you for this change, for they will remember how happy they have been of late years under the Reign of Q. *Elizabeth*, the King My Father, and My Self, untill the beginning of theſe unhappy Troubles, and will have cauſe to doubt that they ſhall never be ſo happy under any new. And by this time it will be too ſenſibly evident, that the Arms I took up were only to defend the fundamentall Laws of this Kingdome, againſt thoſe who have ſuppoſed My power hath totally changed the ancient Government. Thus

Thus having ſhewed you briefly the Reaſons, why I cannot ſubmit to your pretended Authority, without violating the truſt which I have from God, for the welfare and liberty of My People; I expect from you either cleer Reaſons to convince My judgement, ſhewing Me that I am in an Error (and then truly I will readily anſwer) or that you will withdraw your proceedings.

Sir *Hardreſſe Waller*, *Harriſon*, *Deane*, and *Okey*, Colonels, with Lieutenant Generall *Ireton*, are by the Court appointed to conſider of time and place for executing the King, who reſolve that the Open ſtreete before *White Hall* is a fit place, and that the King be there executed the next day being the 30 of *January* 1648. and that the ſcaffold be covered with black.

January 27. the King lay at *White Hall*, the next day being Sunday, the Biſhop of *London* preached before him in his Chamber; The ſame day all the Members of the Court kept a faſt in the Chappell at *White Hall*.

Munday his Children were permitted to viſit him at St *James's*, but ſtaid not long.

Tueſday the 30 of *January*, the fatall day, he prays and receives the Sacrament, and at ten a Clock attended by a Regiment of foote, and his Guard of Partiſons, with Biſhop *Juxſon* on one hand, and Colonell *Tomlinſon* on the other, walks afoote through the Parke, as they were going he

bids

bids them goe faſter, telling *them he now went before them to ſtrive for a heavenly Crowne with leſs ſolicitude, then he had oftentimes bid his Souldiers to fight for an earthly Diadem*; he goes into his Cabinet Chamber at *White Hall*, continuing in his devotions, refuſing to dine, but about twelve a Clock he eat a bit of bread and drank a glaſſe of claret wine; neere one of the Clock he was convey'd through the Banqueting houſe, and paſt through the great window upon the ſcaffold covered with black, where he beheld two Executioners diſguiſd with vizards, the Ax and Block ready, which nothing affrighted him; he addreſt himſelf to Colonell *Tomlinſon* as followeth.

I Shall be very little heard of any body elſe, I ſhall therefore ſpeak a word unto you here: Indeed I could have held my peace very well, if I did not think that holding My peace would make ſome men think that I did ſubmit to the guilt, as well as to the punishment: But I think it is My duty to God firſt, and then to My Country, to clear My Self both as an honeſt man, a good King, and a good Chriſtian.

I ſhall begin firſt with My innocency, and in troth, I think it not very needfull for Me to inſiſt long upon this, for all the World knows that I never did begin a War with the two Houſes of Parliament, and I call God to witneſſe, to whom I muſt ſhortly make an account, that I never did intend to incroach upon their Priviledges, they began upon Me; it is the Militia they began upon; they confeſt that the Militia was Mine, but they thought it fit for to have it from Me; and to be ſhort, if any body will look to the dates of Commiſſions, of their Commiſſions and Mine, and likewiſe to the Declarations, he will ſee clearly

clearly that they began these unhappy troubles, not I; so that as for the guilt of these Enormous crimes that are laid against Me, I hope that God will clear Me of it: I will not (for I am in charity) and God forbid that I should lay it upon the two Houses of Parliament, there is no necessity of either, I hope they are free of this guilt; but I believe that ill Instruments, between them and Me, have been the chief cause of all this bloodshed; so that, as I finde My self clear of this, I hope (and pray God) that they may too: yet for all this, God forbid that I should be so ill a Christian, as not to say that Gods judgements are just upon Me: Many times he doth pay Justice by an unjust sentence, that is ordinary: I will only say this, That an unjust * sentence that I suffered for to take effect, is punished now, by an unjust sentence upon Me; so far I have said, to shew you that I am an Innocent man.

* *Earl of Strafford.*

Now for to shew you that I am a good Christian: I hope there is * a good man that will bear Me witnesse, That I have forgiven all the World; and even those in particular that have been the chief causers of My Death; who they are, God knows, I doe not desire to know, I pray God forgive them.

* *Pointing to* Dr. *Juxon* B. *of London.*

But this is not all, My charity must goe further, I wish that they may repent, for indeed they have committed a great sin in that particular; I pray God with St. *Stephen*, *That this be not laid to their charge*; and withall, that they may take the right way to the peace of the Kingdom; for My charity commands Me not only to forgive particular men, but to endeavour to the last gasp, the peace of the Kingdom: So (Sirs) I doe wish with all my Soul. (I see there are some here will carry it further) that they may endeavour the peace of the Kingdom.

Turning to some that wrote.

Now (Sirs) I must shew you both how you are out of the way, and put you in a way; first, you are out of the way,

way, for certainly all the way you ever have had yet, as far as I could find by anything, is in the way of Conqueſt; certainly this is an ill way; for conqueſt in My opinion is never juſt, except there be a good and a juſt cauſe, either for matter of wrong, or a juſt Title, and then if you goe beyond the firſt quarrel that you have, that makes it unjuſt at the end that was juſt at firſt: For if there be only matter of Conqueſt, then it is a great Robbery; as a Pirate ſaid to *Alexander*, that he was the great Robber, himſelf was but a pety Robber; and ſo, Sirs, I doe think for the way that you are in, you are much out of the way.

Now Sirs, for to put you in the way, believe it, you will never go right, nor God will never proſper you, untill you give God his due, the King his due (that is my Succeſſour) and the people their due; I am as much for them as any of you.

You muſt give God his due, by regulating rightly his Church (according to the Scripture) which is now out of order: and to ſet you in a way particularly now I cannot, but only this, A Nationall Synod freely called, freely debating among themſelves, muſt ſettle this, when every opinion is freely and clearly heard.

For the King indeed I will not, the Laws of the Land will clearly inſtruct you for that; therefore becauſe it concerns My own particular, I only give you a touch of it.

For the people. Truly I deſire their liberty and freedom, as much as any body whomſoever; but I muſt tell you, That their liberty and their freedom, conſiſts in having Government under thoſe Laws, by which their Lives and their Goods may be moſt their own. It is not in having a ſhare in the Government, that is nothing pertaining to them. A Subject and a Soveraign are clean different things; and therefore, untill you doe that, I mean, That you doe put the people into that liberty as I ſay, certainly they will never enjoy themſelves.

Sirs, It was for this that now I am hither come: for if

I would have given way to an Arbitrary way, for to have all Laws changed according to the power of the Sword, I needed not to have come here; and therefore I tell you, (and I pray God it be not laid to their charge) That I am the Martyr of the people.

In troth Sirs, I shall not hold you any longer; I will only say this to you, That I could have desired some little time longer, because I would have put this that I have said in a little better order, and have had it a little better digested, then I have done; and therefore I hope you will excuse Me.

I have delivered My Conscience, I pray God, that you doe take those courses that are best for the good of the Kingdom, and your own Salvations.

Bishop of London.

Will your Majesty (though it be very well known what your Majesties affections are to Religion, yet because it may be expected, that You should say somewhat) declare your self for the Worlds satisfaction in that point.

KING.

I thank you very heartily (my Lord) for that I had almost forgotten it. In troth Sirs, My Conscience, in Religion, I think, is very well known to all the World; and therefore I declare before you all, That I die a Christian according to the profession of the Church of *England*, as I found it left to Me by My Father; and this honest * man, I think, will witnesse it. Then turning to the Officers, He said, Sirs, excuse Me for this same. I have a good cause, and I have a gracious God; I will say no more.

* *Pointing to the Bishop.*

Bishop of London.

There is but one Stage more, This Stage is turbulent and troublesome; it is a short one: But You may consider it will soon carry you from Earth to Heaven; and there You shall finde a great deal of cordial joy and comfort.

KING.

KING.

I goe from a corruptible to an incorruptible Crown, where no disturbance can be, no disturbance in the world.

The Bishop.

You are exchanged from a temporal to an eternal Crown; a good exchange.

Then the King, after some short and fervent ejaculations in private, with hands and eyes lift up to Heaven: immediately stooping down, laid His neck upon the Block: And then the Executioner appointed to give the fatal blow, putting His hair under his Cap, the King said, Stay for the signe.

And after a very little pause, stretching forth His hands, the Executioner at one blow severed His Head from His Body, and he changed a troublesome life for a quiet death.

His body was put in a Coffin covered with black Velvet, and from thence carried to his House at St. *James's*, where it was put in a Coffin of Lead, laid there to be seen by the people. On Wednesday the 7th of *Feb.* his Corpses was delivered to two of his servants to be buried at *Windsor*; whither the next day, The Duke of *Richmond*, the Marquess of *Hartford*, the Earls of *Lindsey* and *Southampton*, together with Dr. *Juxon*, and divers others repaired, where with much difficulty they finde a Vault in St. *George's* Chappell, where King *Henry* the Eighth was formerly buried: which being prepared, a small piece of Lead, some two foote long, and two inches broad was provided; on which was inscribed;

which was sawdred to the brest of the Corpse: all things being in readiness, the Corpse was brought to the Vault by the Souldiers of the Garrison, over which was a black Velvet Hearse-Cloth, which was supported by four Lords, the Bishop of *London* stood weeping by, then was it deposited in silence and sorrow, the Hearse-Cloth being cast in after it.

FINIS.